# Academia Arena

Academia Arena

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Websites:

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails:

aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

Phone: (347) 321-7172

Cover design: MA, Hongbao Photograph: YOUNG, Mary



Academia Arena 2010;2(10)

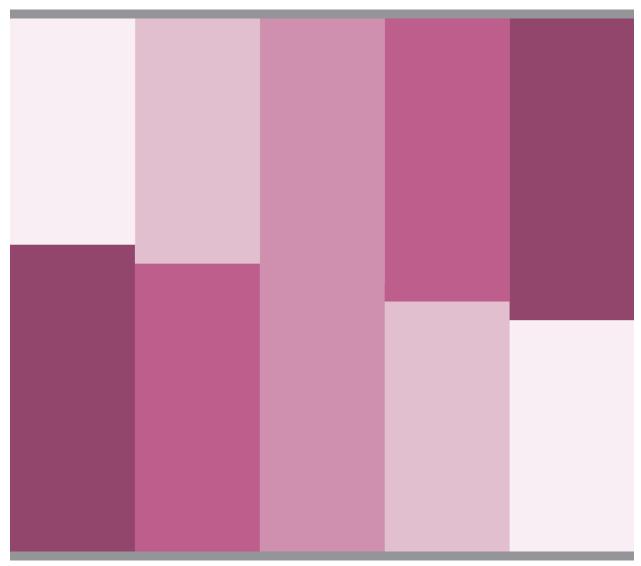


Websites

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails: aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

# Academia Arena





http://www.sciencepub.net/academia http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails: aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

## Academia Arena

(Academ Arena) ISSN 1553-992X

# 学术争鸣

Academia Arena is published bi-linguistically with English and Chinese for the scientists and Engineers. The journal founded in January 1, 2009 aims to present an arena of science and engineering. The Editor-in-Chief, Associate Editors-in-Chief and Editors have backgrounds in Philosophy, Science, Technology, Cosmology, Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, Medicine, Civil, Electrical, Mechanical Engineering, etc. Papers submitted could be reviews, objective descriptions, research reports, opinions/debates, news, letters, and other types of writings.

学术争鸣于2009年元月1日在美国纽约马斯兰德出版社发刊,主要目标为提供科学家与工程师及社会工作者学术辩论的发表园地,专业 领域包含哲学、科学、技术、宇宙学、数学、物理、化学、生物学、医学、土木、电机、化工、机械工程,等,编辑群将以最专业客 观的立场为所有投稿作者服务。

Editor-in-Chief: Ma, Hongbao, mahongbao@gmail.com

Associate Editors-in-Chief: Cherng, Shen; Henry, Mark; Herbert, John

Editors: Badoni, Anoop; Chen, George; Chen, Guoren; Kalimuthu, Sennimalai; Kholoussi, Naglaa; Kumar, Anand; Ma, Margaret; Mahmoud, Amal; Tan, Tianrong; Tewari, Lalit M; Wang, Kuide; Young, Jenny; Refaat, Youssef; Yusuf, Mahmoud; Zaki, Maha Saad; Zaki, Mona Saad Ali; Zhang, Dongsheng

Web Design: Ma, Hongbao

#### Information for Authors

#### 1. Manuscripts Submission

- (1) Submission Methods: Electronic submission through email would be accepted.
- (2) Software: The Microsoft Word file is preferred.
- (3) Font: Normal, Times New Roman, 10 pt, single space.
- (4) Indent: Type 4 spaces in the beginning of each new paragraph.
- (5) Manuscript: Don't use "Footnote" or "Header and Footer".
- (6) Cover Page: Put detail information of authors and a short running title in the cover page.
- (7) Title: Use Title Case in the title and subtitles, e.g. "Debt and Agency Costs".
- (8) Figures and Tables: Use full word of figure and table, e.g. "Figure 1. Annul Income of Different Groups", Table 1. List Data".
- **(9) References:** Cite references by "last name, year", e.g. "(Smith, 2003)". References should include all the authors' last names and initials, title, journal, year, volume, issue, and pages etc.

#### Reference Examples:

Journal Article: Hacker J, Hentschel U, Dobrindt U. Prokaryotic chromosomes and disease. Science 2003;301(34):790-3.

**Book**: Berkowitz BA, Katzung BG. Basic and clinical evaluation of new drugs. In: Katzung BG, ed. Basic and clinical pharmacology. Appleton & Lance Publisher. Norwalk, Connecticut, USA. 1995:60-9.

#### (10) Submission Address: Marsland Press

PO Box 180432, Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA; Telephone: (347) 321-7172; Email: <a href="mailto:editor@sciencepub.net">editor@sciencepub.net</a>.

(11) Reviewers: Authors should suggest 2-8 competent reviewers with their name and email.

#### 2. Manuscript Preparation

Each manuscript should be formatted to include the following components:

- (1) Title: Complete article title;
- (2) Author(s): Each author's full name; institution(s) with which each author is affiliated, with city, state/province, zip code, and country; and the name, complete mailing address, telephone number, facsimile number (if available), and e-mail address for all correspondence.
- (3) Abstract: including Background, Materials and Methods, Results, and Discussions.
- (4) Key Words.
- (5) Introduction.
- (6) Materials and Methods.
- (7) Results.
- (8) Discussions.
- (9) Acknowledgments.
- (10) References.
- (11) Date submitted
- **3.** Copyright and Responsibility of Authors to their Articles: When the manuscript(s) is submitted to the journal, the authors agree the following: All the authors have participated sufficiently in this work; The article is not published elsewhere; Authors are responsibility on the contents of the article; The journal and author(s) have same right for the copyright of the article and either of the journal or author(s) can use it by anyway without noting the other party.

#### Journal Address:

Marsland Press PO Box 180432

Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Telephone: (347) 321-7172 E-mail: <u>sciencepub@gmail.com</u>; <u>editor@sciencepub.net</u>

Websites: http://www.sciencepub.net

© 2010 Marsland Press

## **CONTENTS**

1	The New Concepts to Big Bang and to Black Holes: Both Had No Singularity at All Dongsheng Zhang	1-4
2	<b>21 世纪新儒学量子色动力学</b> 白科大	5-22
3	<b>地震起因和防治</b> 孙纯武	23-31
4	<b>从川大走出的数理化"三剑客"</b> 叶眺新	32-46
5	The Anatomy of Earth (Global Warming) Earth's Orbit around the Sun is Decaying Willie McDonald	47-48
6	Analysis of the influence of community based organizations on community development in Rivers State, Nigeria Onyeozu, A.M	49-53
7	几个理论物理问题 Xue Sheng	54-57
8	Determinants Of Farm And Off –Farm Income Among Farmhouseholds In South East Nigeira Ibekwe, U.C; C.C. Eze; C.S. Onyemauwa; A. Henri-Ukoha; O.C. Korie and I.U. Nwaiwu	58-61
9	<b>对万有引力的再考察</b> (再评广义相对论) 谭夭荣	62-66
10	<b>惯性力与加速系的物理学</b> (一评广义相对论) 谭天荣	67-71
11	Laws of Nature: Genesis and Enforcement Dr Javed Jamil	72-79
12	Role Of Cassava In Minimizing Household Food Insecurity In Owerri North L.G.A Of Imo State Emenyonu, Christopher Akujuobi, Inyang, Nyambi .N., Ohajianya Donatus .O., Henri-Ukoha Ada, Onyemauwa Sebastian .C., Kadiri Fuasat Ajoke	80-85
13	Nesting Behaviour of a Tropical Avian Species, the Pied Bush Chat (Saxicola caprata) Vinaya Kumar Sethi, Dinesh Bhatt, Amit Kumar and Vivek Saxena	86-90

14 Uptake of Phosphate and Heavy Metals by Sorghum in Automobile Waste affected Typic HaplustuLt in South east Nigeria.

C.N. Mbah

91-93

## The New Concepts to Big Bang and to Black Holes: Both Had No Singularity at All

#### ==== **Preface**====

《The fundamental defect of the General Theory of Relativity Equation is that any particles in EGTR has no thermodynamic action. It leads finally the gravitational collapse of a definite energy-matter only go to Singularity.》

May/2010

Dongsheng Zhang Email:zhangds12@hotmail.com New Edition Graduated in 1957 From Beijing University of Aeronautics and Astronautics. China.

[Abstract]: Right now, the General Theory of Relativity Equation (GTRE) is almost linked together with all new physical concepts, such as the Big Bang, black holes (BH), Singularity, zero point energy, dark energy, N demission spaces, etc. Perhaps say it in another way, all above new physical concepts are squeezed into GTRE by the modern physicians as the reasonable coats in the mainstream of physics. However, the observed facts have demonstrated that, those new physical concepts may be illusory. The obvious examples are singularity and the density of vacuum energy. About 40 years ago, R. Penrose and S. Hawking discovered Singularity losing the time-space significance in EGTR, but there would not be any indications of singularity of infinitely great density observed in nature. They further derived from GTRE that, our universe was originated from singularity, which would certainly exist in any BHs, and even have naked singularity in universe. They also proposed out "the hypothesis of cosmic censorship" for explaining singularity better in nature, In addition, according to J. Wheeler's calculations, the density of vacuum energy would be up to 10<sup>95</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>. All above arguments are unimaginable, unrealistic and may have no way to be In this article below, author will demonstrate with Hawking's laws of black observed and demonstrated forever. holes that, there would not be any singularity in BHs, and our universe was not born from singularity or the Big Bang of singularity at all. Singularity can only be a product from GTRE, but impossibly appear and exist in real nature.

[Dongsheng Zhang. The New Concepts to Big Bang and to Black Holes Both Had No Singularity at All. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):1-4]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

**Key Words**: General Theory of Relativity Equation (GTRE); singularity; black holes (BH); big bang;; Planck era; Planck particle--m<sub>p</sub>; minimum gravitational black holes--<sub>Mbm</sub>;

【1】。 The different results and conclusions of the scientific research can be decided by scientists with their different research method. However, the correct result and conclusion must accord with the observed and practical texts.

Why had the problem of Singularity troubled scientists for over fifty years? Because in GTRE which have only the sole gravitational forces between energy-matter particles and have no heat pressures as resistant forces, the results of the pure gravitational collapses would certainly and finally lead to the appearance of singularity. Therefore, GTRE which violates the causality and the second law of thermodynamics is only a mathematical equation, it cannot reflect the reality in nature.

In this article, some Hawking laws about BHs will be applied, as to study the changes of physical parameters on the event horizon of BH. The superiority of Hawking theory about BH is that, the variations of physical parameters on the event horizon of BH can completely obey quantum mechanics and

thermodynamic laws. Thus, BHs can become to have the general law of life and death like everything in nature. Owing to applying Hawking laws accordant with thermodynamic laws on the event horizon of BHs, and regardless of the variations of states and structures inside BHs, as the results, the final collapse of the event horizon of any BH would finally become minimum BH ( $\underline{M}_{bm}$ ), i.e.  $\underline{M}_{bm} = (hC/8\pi G)^{1/2} = 10^{-5} g = m_p$ , and minimum BH ( $\underline{M}_{bm}$ ) can just be Planck particle ( $m_p$ ). It shows that the final collapse of any BH would only become  $m_p$  and explode in Planck Era, but impossibly continuously collapse to singularity. The above correct conclusions don't need to solve the complicated GTRE.

【2】。 The second law of thermodynamics is the causality in nature. It shows the time direction and cannot be violated by any ultimate theories included GTRE. How would physicists violate the thermodynamic laws in the process to solve GTRE? All the famous physicists included Friedmann,

Schwarzschild and Einstein himself <u>proposed two</u> <u>hypotheses to solve GTRE</u>, the first one is the gravitational shrink with equal mass, the second one is the "universal model of zero (constant) pressure". Just those two hypotheses have violated thermodynamic laws and lead to appearance of singularity in solve EGTR.

Suppose a definite (equal) amount of energymatter particles (M) is in a shrinkable process,

- 1\*. When M change from state 1 to state 2, according to the second law of thermodynamics,  $\int TdS = C + (Q_2 Q_1)$ , in above formula, Q—quantity of heat; T—temperature; S—entropy; C—constant. It shows that, M in the heat-insulating and free state can only produce expansion and lower its temperature T due to increase in its S, but impossibly produce contraction.
- 2\*. Let  $M = M_1 + M_2$ , according to the thermodynamic laws, in case M<sub>1</sub> in the shrinkable process could only decrease in S and increase in T and pressure with emitting energy-matters outside, and M<sub>2</sub> would get the corresponding increments from M<sub>1</sub>, then M<sub>1</sub> could gradually reduce its energy-matters and shrink its size. Once M<sub>1</sub> could not remove out any energy-matters from inside, M<sub>1</sub> would stop its contraction at once. If M<sub>1</sub> as a original nebula could shrink its size and increase in  $T \approx 2 \times 10^7 k$  and T reach the temperature of nuclear fusion in its center, thus, a new star would appear in the sky. In the star conditions, once energy produced in a star core  $(M_1)$  from nuclear fusion could be equal to the amount of energy discharged out from M<sub>1</sub>, star (M<sub>1</sub>) would keep its constant temperature and pressure inside, and no more shrink its size in a long-term period. Only in the shrinkable process losing energy-matters, the process can really accord with thermodynamic laws. It clearly shows that, if no energy-matters emit outside, a definite amount of energy-matters (M) cannot shrink its size with the sole gravitational forces by itself.
- 3\*. If  $M_1$  could shrink its size to Schwarz child's limited condition, i.e.  $M_1 = C^2 R_1/2G$ , due to emitting energy-matters outside and increase in temperature,  $M_1$  would become a complete BH.  $R_1$  is the event horizon of BH  $M_1$ . After  $M_1$  become a BH,  $M_1$  would expand its size and decrease in its temperature and density with engulfing the greater energy-matter particles from outside, and shrink its size with emitting the smallest Hawking quantum radiations to outside. Once  $M_1$  could engulf all energy-matters outside,  $M_1$  would non-stop emit Hawking quantum radiations (HQR) to outside, contract its size and increase in its temperature, finally, up to  $M_1 = M_{bm} = (hC/8\pi G)^{1/2} = 10^{-5}$  g =  $m_p$ , Planck particle ( $m_p = M_{bm}$ ) had to explode in Planck Era at once, but impossibly continuously collapse to singularity. It will be demonstrated below.

It can be seen that, the appearance of singularity in GTRE is due to the wrong hypothesis of contraction of equal energy-matter and the hypothesis of constant temperature and pressure in solving EGTR.

[3] Since singularity derived from GTRE by physicists is not accordance with reality in nature, it clearly shows that, GTRE has the basic defect hardly to be overcome. GTRE was not built on the reliable experimental foundation, but was a product from Einstein's brain. In GTRE, there are only the gravitational forces, but not heat pressure as exclusive forces between all particles in the whole body. Thus, every particle m<sub>s</sub> in the body could only be in the unstable state, so, the exact and real movement of any particles  $\underline{m}_s$  in or outside body could not be got from solve EGTR. For getting a model of stable state of the universe, Einstein added a universal constant  $\Lambda$  as the exclusive forces in GTRE several years later. However,  $\Lambda$  is added outside the body,  $\Lambda$  as a acting force can only push the whole body to do some whole movement, but  $\Lambda$  have no way to resist the gravitational forces of every particle inside body. Therefore, the movements of every particle inside are not certain yet. It is the reason why GTRE is born weak and ill cared for after

However, even though GTRE has some important defects, GTRE as a new universal outlook to integrate time and space together can have very great significances on science and on philosophy.

According to Einstein's explanations to GTRE, as a steel ball presses on a tight circular rubber web. the web should be crooked. Sun can let lights outside crooked like above rubber web. Though the system of GTRE had included some rational contents of Newton's system. However, GTRE had only solved few important problems which were not solved by Newton's system in the past 100 years. It shows that, GTRE is also a uncompleted great system like Newton's system before. In his old age, Einstein said: "Every body think that, I would feel calm and satisfied, while I look backward about the works in my life. On the contrary in fact, I firmly believe that, there would not be any concepts proposed by me in the past which had been stable like a huge rock. I'm not sure that, whether or not I was in the correct orbit in total." Only an epoch-making scientific giant created many marvels could modestly state a common truth with his splendid achievements.

[4] o In the real universe, how could the state of temperature and the gravitational forces between all particles of M in a definite ball, affect the movement of a particle m<sub>s</sub> inside or outside the ball? Suppose a definite mass (M) in a rubber ball with a radius R, its

temperature T, the elastic forces of rubber ball can be neglected.

- 1\*. In case  $m_s$  outside the ball,  $R_s$  is the distance between  $m_s$  and the center of ball,  $m_s$  does the curvilinear motion effected by the gravitational forces of M, the radius of curvature at  $R_s$  is  $k_s$ , temperature  $T_s$ . If ball M expands due to increase in temperature from  $T_s \to T_1$ , because R and M become bigger, the distance from  $R_s \to R$  becomes shorter, then, the gravitational forces of M to  $m_s$  become bigger, so, the radius of curvature  $k_{s1}$  become bigger too, and  $k_{s1} > K_s$ , then, the motion of  $m_s$  would shorten  $R_s$ .
- $2^*$ . On the contrary, in case ball M and R becomes smaller due to decrease in temperature from  $T_s \to T_2$ , correspondingly,  $k_{s2} < K_s$ , then, the motion of  $m_s$  would lead  $R_s$  become longer.
- 3\*. In case  $m_s$  inside the ball M, the distance  $R_s$  would becomes shorter or longer while temperature of M becomes lower or higher. It is said, the change of temperature in a body M has to affect the motional orbit of any particle  $m_s$  inside or outside the body.

Conclusion: It can be seen that, applying the hypothesis of "universal model of zero (constant) pressure " to solve GTRE cannot accord with the reality in nature. Temperature and pressure of every particle cannot be neglected in GTRE at all, Once neglecting the heat pressure of all particles as exclusive forces to gravity, it would certainly lead to the appearance of singularity. That just is the tragedy of EGTR.

- 4\*. A ball of particles in the heat-insulating and free state can only expand but not shrink. It shows that, the heat pressure of particles would be bigger than its gravitational forces, Therefore, the hypothesis that a ball full of energy-matters could shrink its size under the heat-insulating and free state, is a "artificial proposition". A ball of particles would shrink its size, only its heat could emit outside and decrease in temperature. Specifically, once a star BH formed after the explosion of supernova, owing to BH having no way to emit energy-matters outside except extremely faint Hawking quantum radiations, and owing to BH inside having no way to produce super higher pressure than the explosion of supernova, as the result, energymatters inside BH could absolutely impossible shrink with the gravitational forces of themselves, still more impossible to shrink to singularity of infinite density. It can be seen, singularity is an absurd result of GTRE caused from hypothesis to violate the thermodynamic
- [5] At first, GTRE has only two items, i.e. the first item is Einstein tensor to describe the geometrical characteristics of time-space; the second one is energy-momentum tensor to describe the field of energy-matters. In reality, GTRE should be a unstable

- dynamical equation, it could hardly describe the motions of every particle in or out a ball which is shrinking. It is the reason why GTRE must set up two false hypotheses to violate the thermodynamic laws for getting a solution of stable state, one is "definite energy-matters", another one is "universal model of zero pressure". Just those two false hypotheses let GTRE to inevitable appearance of singularity. It clearly Shows that, only the states of a ball of energy-matters are extremely approximate to above two hypotheses, GTRE may be solved and get some better results. For examples:
- 1\*. In case M is the total energy-matter in a ball (region) great enough, owing to stability of density and pressure in the ball, so, the orbit and curvature of motion of particles  $m_s$  (included light) outside may be approximately got from solving GTRE. Scientists often applied the principle of GTRE to calculate light deflection near star or star cluster, but the result not precisely.
- 2\*. When mercury passes by sun, owing to that sun is a stable ball, its density distributions can be easily got, so, the calculated value of the motion of mercury at perihelion got from GTRE is more precise than got from Newton dynamics.
- 3\*. Let sun as a ball of stable temperature and constant diameter, the light deflection appeared near sun cannot be explained and calculated by Newton dynamics, but only be solved by GTRE, because according to special theory of relativity (STR), any light must have no mass. Suppose lights would have some corresponding mass, Newton dynamics might also solve the problem of light deflection near sun.
- **[6]** o In our universe, either any stable thing or body, or a stable ball of matters, their stable structures are all the results of balance inside between gravitational forces and heat pressures as exclusive forces under the condition of some definite temperature and pressure. Thus, keeping the limits of permitted temperature and pressure can just be keeping the stable existence of the structures of that thing or body or a ball of matters. It shows that, the stable and solid structures of a matters or a body, but not broken, can resist the gravitational collapse of great amount of matters. If the sole contraction of gravitational forces of definite energy-matters can't overcome the resistance of solid structure, the contraction can only be stopped.
- 1\*. In our universe, any body of mass <10<sup>15</sup>g always has a little solid core, which can support the gravitational collapse of a great amount of mass outside the core. Any planet has a solid or liquid iron core to resist the gravitational collapse of mass outside the core. Sun and all other stars must have a stable core of very high temperature and pressure producing

nuclear fusion, which can maintain the high pressure in core to resist the gravitational collapse of matters outside the core. Every white dwarf has a solid core of high density about  $10^6 \text{g/cm}^3$ . Any neutron star has a solid core of high density about  $10^{16} \text{g/cm}^3$ , which can only produced by the strongest explosion of supernova in our universe. Generally, after a supernova of the original mass  $> 8~M_{\theta}$  (sun mass) exploding, its survivals may form a star BH with density of about  $10^{16} \text{g/cm}^3$ . In any star BHs, the highest density in core may  $\leq 10^{16} \text{g/cm}^3$ .

- 2\*. <u>In our present universe, the strongest explosion may only be originated from supernovae, it can only presses matters to density of 10<sup>16</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>. neutrons can't be broken in about density of 10<sup>16</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup>. Thus, <u>inside any star BH, it could impossibly produce the supernova explosion again. Therefore, the gravitational contraction of matters in star BH could absolutely not collapse to singularity.</u> What is more, the bigger BH is, the lower its density will be, so, the bigger BHs inside could more impossibly collapse to singularity.</u>
- 3\*. At the time of building GTRE, Einstein only knew two forces-- gravity and electromagnetic force, but not know other two forces—weak force and strong force. Scientists even didn't know white dwarfs and neutron stars, and their high density in core to 10<sup>6</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> and  $10^{16}$  g/cm<sup>3</sup> at that time. Perhaps they considered that the gravitational collapse of matters is a simple and natural process. Now, scientists know that the matter density may be high to 10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> under combined interactions of above 4 forces, but the strongest explosion of supernova in our universe can only press matters to the high density of  $10^{16}$ g/cm<sup>3</sup>. Thus, the resistance of density from 10<sup>16</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> to 10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> could be too high to be overcome by the gravitational collapse of matters in our universe, the density of singularity >>10<sup>93</sup>g/cm<sup>3</sup> could impossibly be overcome by any present natural forces.
- [7] It can be seen,  $1^*$ . if wanting to get the <u>stable orbit</u> of any particles  $m_s$  in or out a ball of energy-matters from GTRE, then, the exclusive forces of heat pressure must be added into item of energy-momentum tensor in GTRE, but not  $\Lambda$  added outside the item of energy-momentum tensor.  $2^*$ . In case a ball of energy-

This article originally published in [Nature and Science. 2004;2(3):1-4].

matters have the gravitational collapse, a solid core and its structure must exist. In reality, above two conditions (heat pressure and structure of high density) should just be the mechanisms or origin in nature to obstruct the occurrence of Singularity. However, the current GTRE has no way to be added in those two or any other supplementary conditions, it would certainly break the perfection of GTRE and impossibly be permitted by Einstain and GTRE. Those are reasons why GTRE just has a showy appearance, but hardly had practical use in the past 100 years. Furthermore, R.Penrose and S.Hawking got a monster of inconceivable singularity from GTRE.

Why would the most scientists believe the inconceivable singularity? Starting off from singularity, scientists might dream of the more inconceivable concepts: such as, white holes. Worm holes, and how to travel to other universe, etc.

[8] According to his imagination, but not on the basis of observations and experiments, the model created a new scientific theory of GTRE by Einstein is widespread welcome and accepted by scientists in the future, because they can build and develop the new scientific theories and concepts only with their intelligent brain. After that, various new theories and concepts had been born out like the bamboo shoots after a spring rain, such as the Big Bang, Singularity, dark energy, N demission spaces, string theory, film theory, theory of everything, etc. An important defect of GTRE leading the occurrence of singularity is the point structure of particles in GTRE. String and film are not the point structure, so, singularity can impossibly appear in string theory or film theory.

Most importantly, any new theory or concept can impossibly be successful, if it has no thermodynamic actions.

[9] In Part 1 of this article, it will be proved that, the final collapse of any BHs would be minimum BHs-- $M_{bm} = (hC/8\pi G)^{1/2} = m_p$ , and disappeared in Planck Era. In Part 2 of this article, it will be proved that, our universe was originated from minimum BHs- $M_{bm} = m_p$  in Planck Era, not originated from singularity, or the Big Bang of singularity. =1.09 × 10- $\frac{5}{2}$ g.

5/5/2010

### 21 世纪新儒学---量子色动力学

#### 白科大

#### y-tx@163.com, huchangwei5@yahoo.com.cn

**摘要:** 21 世纪新儒学被徐光宪先生定格在 1959 年后的这 50 年,让 21 世纪新儒学理科与文科交融叠加,走进北京大学。也走进了上海,走进了上海师范大学。

[白科大. 21 世纪新儒学---量子色动力学. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):5-22]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

关键词: 儒学 味夸克 夸克海

#### 一、21 世纪新儒学初识

高国梁先生是北京一位 30 岁左右的年青学者,学文的,但对理科也感兴趣,特别是对王锡玉老先生用周易、玄子物理等代替现代科学解释水变油核反应、宇宙暗物质、地震预报之类很推崇。他问笔者:三旋理论类似现代几何科学方法,和王锡玉老先生的理论区别在哪里?能不能整合起来?

高国梁先生问出了 21 世纪之声。21 世纪已过去了 10 年,中国有成千上亿像王锡玉、高国梁这样的老中青同胞,不管是学理的还是学文的,近 60 年来,不辞辛劳,像愚公移山一样追求基础科学的创新。应该说,我们都是一个战壕的战友,却分成相反方向在前进。原因是十年文革,正是量子色动力学在国际上创建和巩固时期,但我国大学和中学几乎停止公开招生,我国失去的不仅是知识的增长,而是和这一科学关口的碰撞。

层子模型应该说,也是量子色动力学的先声,但时代让我们高举的是斗争哲学,国内科学共同体对西方 1963 年提出的夸克模型,1964 年扩张的夸克颜色模型,敢于说"不"。十年文革后虽说拨乱反正,已追上了国际科学共同体的步伐。王锡玉老先生是上世纪 80 年代初气功和人体特异功浪潮中,我们就认识的学者。以此观察,如果把从古到今,人类科学共同体开拓的方向看成坐标,在前面说的时代背景因素引导下,王锡玉老先生无疑是开倒车的大能人,三旋理论无疑是愚不可及开顺车的跋涉者,两者的整合只能一条路:与时俱进。

正是在这种强音下,有人说:利用我们的无产阶级专政的权威和民主集中制,21世纪的"新儒学"应该是:"对比百家,独尊量子色动力学"。但正如中科院理论物理所著名超弦理论家朱传界研究员,在《写在"2006年国际弦理论会议"前夜》的文章所说:弦理论在中国,在超弦的第一、第二次革命,以及随后的快速发展中,中国都未能在国际上起到应有的作用。我们在研究的整体水平上,与国际、与周边国家如印度、日本、韩国,甚至和我国台湾地区相比都有一定的差距。那为什么不高举弦理论而"独尊量子色动力学"呢?

因为我国并不急需要弦理论,而是应该补课。只要量子色动力学的课补好了,从王锡玉到弦理论都能整合起来,而且弦理论也会有实验基础。

儒学的精神是整合,但在 20 世纪的新儒学中,并没有很好地理解。所以,与时俱进和循规蹈矩是两派并存的。而 20 世纪,科学是生产力,已被邓小平等中国共产党人所认识。但 20 世纪的新儒学,并没有认识到文科和理科整合的意义。新儒学大师一般以文科自居、自傲。甚至有人以各种美名,挑动文科和理科之间的"战争",影响到下一代的培养。如有人说,不少中国学生对"场"的理科概念:梯度、旋度、散度,只停留在定义式上,应用尤其不熟练。中国学生虽然中学的代数运算技巧、三角变换技巧,非常扎实。但留学国外,让老外瞠目结舌的是,对大学里的那些蕴含着大智慧的高等工具,却有强烈排斥倾向。除了基本的微积分运算之外,中国学生的数理思维能力,还停留在中学巅峰时期的水平,甚至还差些。

以"整合"代换斗争哲学,例如汉朝董仲舒等以儒学整合经济,有人说,是他们看到中国虽然早有相当的城市化和商业市场、货币,手工业,但汉朝当时为防止人民逃漏税,政策允许密告的人,可得到没收的财产中相当大的一部分,因此全国到处都有人告密,这样做便破坏了工商业的机制,故生产的事业只好转入农村。但在农村生产,工业产量并不大,而且须要有集散物品机制功能的全国性经济网络。因为农村工业产量不大,物品集散的机制可以形成全国性的经济网络。而儒学实用的爱人、秩序、宽信说教,正好得以整合和组织起全国为一的经济交换网,即使政治可分裂、内乱、割据、外族征服,经济网络可破裂,但时间都不会很长。因为区域与区域间的互相依赖,使得经济网络必须重新建立。又如以爱人、秩序。宽信等儒学整合文化,汉初各地精英经过察举制度,可汇集在中央。中央又有学校;学成后可回到各地教书。上层文化统

一的功力,如董仲舒编的《春秋繁露》构建,规模之大,兼包自然与人事,如此这类成果构成了跨时代、跨地域的文化传播大格局。

儒学整合各种层面大系统,兼容并蓄,兼括并至,无所不包。各地不同的人群,也愿意留在这个大系统中,使得几千年来中国人,一直以儒学自居。21世纪,世界逐渐走到庞大的全球性格局,以中国儒学整合构建天下国家的经验,而非拒绝与对抗,人类恐需经历世界性的可能又是另外一个大的天下国家时代。如果我们能利用己有的无产阶级专政和民主集中制,"对比百家,独尊量子色动力学",不是更好?那又什么是量子色动力学呢?

量子色动力学是把握世界,基本粒子并不基本,最能体现出理论、实验、实践、革命性的百家争鸣的学科,它有四大特点。有人把它简称为是,一种能管强相互作用的理论;有人把它简称为是,描述夸克之间通过交换胶子而相互作用的相对性量子场论;有人把它简称为是,描述色胶子场运动的理论,其中包括对色荷和色荷流(荷的流动)的响应。数学上看,色动力学是对电动力学的推广。由于量子理论在色动力学的所有方面的所有应用都很重要,因此通常也称为量子色动力学。这些定义都对,但要更全面又简称,可定义为是有四大特点的一种能管强相互作用的理论,或者有四大特点的描述夸克之间通过交换胶子而相互作用的相对性量子场论,或者有四大特点的描述色胶子场运动的理论。这四大特点是:

#### 1、与时俱进和循规蹈矩,两派并存

弗兰克·维尔切克是 2004 年诺贝尔物理奖的得主, 2010 年 4 月湖南科技出版社出版他的《存在之轻》一书,介绍了他和夸克首创者、1969 年诺贝尔物理奖的得主盖尔曼之间的分歧。在该书 44 页上,维尔切克说他第一次遇见盖尔曼就真切地感受到这一点。因为盖尔曼对维尔切克改进部分子模型不以为然;维尔切克说盖尔曼,讽刺他的研究"是不要夸克了?"还说诺贝尔物理奖得主费曼的部分子研究是笑话,是污染科学。也许正是这种分歧,影响到我国科学界的一些老一代科学家,如崔珺达教授著书说讲,夸克实验遭到严重困难。层子模型依据的是哲学,而非物理实验;在 1966 年北京科学讨论会上,层子科学家们说,层子在基本方面类似夸克,但夸克可能是不存在的。从而崔珺达教授反对夸克,也反对层子模型。

然而维尔切克喜新不厌旧,轻松摆平盖尔曼。他说:"盖尔曼和费曼都有正确的一面:质子内有夸克,也其他东西"。正是维尔切克的这种喜新不厌旧,继往开来,与时俱进,成为量子色动力学的一大特色,也成为21世纪的新儒学的一大特色。

那么中国"兵败"层子模型吗?中科院光电所周天龙高工,2001年在《科学中国人》优秀论文选(2)等上发表《电子模型》,声称质子由919个正电子和918个负电子组成,是原始科学创新,可以解决物理学前沿很多难题。电子模型要挑战夸克模型,电子模型可获得诺贝尔物理学奖。中国崔珺达--周天龙现象有多少?互联网论坛打开就可知。当然层子科学家们,大多数现在已经承认夸克,且很多层子科学家也在研究弦理论。中国科学家为主,完成在北京正负电子对撞机上进行的北京谱仪实验,观测到的命名为"X一八三五"等新粒子,在国际知名期刊《物理评论快报》等上发表,并引起国际高能物理界的极大兴趣。因为"X一八三五"粒子可能是胶子球或常规介子等。三旋理论是中国本土量子色动力学的多年自主的业余科学研究,中国科学院学部联合办公室、中国工程院学部办公室等主办的《世界科技研究与发展》双月刊,1999年第6期发表《三旋理论展望》的长篇综述探索报告,这些都是值得肯定的。

但由于量子色动力学与时俱进和循规蹈矩解释,两派并存,影响到了国内教学、出版、科普等对量子色动力学的完整介绍,出于稳妥或保守起见,一般只偏重循规蹈矩的解释。

#### 2、变革质子不变,是扩张变革原子不变

如果变革分子、原子后,仍然是分子、原子,并属化学能、电能、核能、机械能;那么变革质子、电子后,仍然属质子、电子,就归"量子色动能"。从量子色动力学结构信息提取的量子色动能,效率是高于从量子电动力学等结构信息提取的化学能、电能、核能、机械能。其原理类似把原子激光理论的有粒子数反转与无粒子数反转,扩张到电子、质子内部,量子色动能也可称为"量子色动激光器"、"量子色动化学"、"量子色动几何"、"真空能"。马成金先生发现以钾、钠元素配置的引发剂土"夸克球"加水,发现的也许是这种可控的量子色动激光器。核能不管是裂变还是聚变,还是属于相对论性量子场论和量子电动力学、电动力学的范畴。它是原子电子能级和核子的跃迁。大型正负电子、质子对撞机,及其"软"辐射、"硬"辐射,是电子、质子内部的粒子能级跃迁。从"软"辐射、"硬"辐射发现的其内产生的各种"色荷云",解释钾、钠元素配置的引发剂土"夸克球"的超能反应,探索的"量子色动能","弱力能源"等问题,研究操纵的是 21 世纪量子色动力学大潮的去核化、去石油化的能源走向。例如以钾、钠元素配置的引发剂土"夸克球"不加油,可以使水循环流动喷燃,这里量子色动能发出的 16400 大卡的高热值(添加剂除外),不是加碳的直接原因。

#### 3、广义色荷,纠缠环圈及多重自旋编码

三旋理论计算非常复杂,但有两种简便处理方法。一是"李后强方法"。这类似从数学上描述大分子的空间构象----类似酶和蛋白质的大分子链,无论链线弯曲、封闭等类似丝卷的无规行走,或"树近似"的凝胶渗流等,如能找出局部链节或链段聚合标度,以此形态和整链形态缩影作比较判断,可分为线型链、支化链和网状链等具有明显的简单的分形特征。类此具体联系类圈体自旋:如一个物体作平动,取其一标记点的轨迹,可以看成一条流线,用这种思想处理类圈体三旋的 62 种自旋状态,李后强教授的大分子链无论链线弯曲、封闭等类似丝卷的无规行走,或"树近似"的凝胶渗流等分形特征分类标记,就能扩张进来。

二是"杨振宁方法"。杨振宁的规范场,是把球面自旋扩张为相性因子和广义电荷,最后自旋各态,变成了虚拟的粒子加进计算。学杨振宁方法,类圈体三旋的 62 种自旋状态,既可以编码各种味夸克、色夸克,也能变成虚拟的粒子加进计算。量子色动力学广义色荷,纠缠环圈及多重自旋编码,这也类似 21 世纪的新以太论。因为维尔切克说,量子维度上的运动所带来的变化不是位移,即这里没有距离的概念,而它是自旋的变化。这种"超速度平移",将给定内在自旋的粒子变成不同的粒子。量子中国始末是以物质无限可分扩张"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"开始,到庞加莱猜想证明应用结束,半个世纪以来,新中国官民结合、军民结合,从一开始就一竿子到底揭示了超对称色动自旋之谜。这就是弦论走到了庞加莱猜想,庞加莱猜想正题是球面拓扑,逆题是环面拓扑,正对应弦论的开弦和闭弦的球量子和圈量子两种拓扑结构。而圈量子的自旋对称性是三种自旋,共 62 类自旋态。在希尔伯特时空点外、点内,这种量子维度被称为量子色动自旋,也叫三旋理论。

#### 4、实践论和矛盾论分类学,全球启动

量子色动力学难的不是它的理论——交换信息,而是它的实验——结构信息。这里复杂的是,两个入射的夸克和反夸克,还可以通过交换胶子,变成另外一对夸克和反夸克。夸克和反夸克有6种不同的味,胶子有8种不同的色,6种不同味的夸克和反夸克又各有3种不同的色。胶子对夸克的色荷可以简单响应,也可以兼具响应和变换。夸克和胶子是质子内部的东西,用电子轰击质子,由于在不同尺度下量子力学不确定性的影响,超级闪光纳米显微镜抓拍到的就会有不同的细节,分辨率高,会发现似乎一个夸克解析成一个夸克和胶子,或者胶子分解成一个夸克和反夸克。分辨率不高,质子内的夸克和胶子的一些小实体或部分子会模糊不清,虚粒子云包裹了每个部分子。虚粒子云还有借助渐进自由有反屏蔽作用。这里实践论和矛盾论都有了分类学的分水岭——矛盾就矛盾,有"拓扑斯"的专门逻辑描述;但最终还是要有大型强子对撞机及其"喷注"和"碎片"现象的演示。如果建造大型正负电子对撞机,需要过10亿欧元,那么建造大型强子对撞机,就需要过100亿欧元,这必须全球启动众多的科技强国和大国来出钱、出高端科学家和成千上万大型的电脑及网络,才能完成。这类似又进入一个"平天下"的新时代。

#### 二、循规蹈矩量子色动力学解释

#### 1、量子/色/动力学

夸克是带有色荷的,胶子场是夸克间发生相互作用的媒介。这让人想起电子是带有电荷的,传递电子间相互作用的媒介是电磁场(光子场)。关于电荷的动力学早已有了量子电动力学,它发展于上世纪三四十年代。以它为例来理解质子内的色相互作用。电磁场的麦克斯韦方程的量子化。就是量子电动力学。如果说,量子电动力学是研究电子和光子的量子碰撞(即散射);那么,量子色动力学就是研究质子内夸克和胶子的量子碰撞。

胶子是色场的量子,就象光子是电磁场的量子。胶子质量一半为0,光子质量都为0,但它们自旋都为1,是传递相互作用的媒介粒子,都属于规范粒子。两个电子发生相互作用,是靠传递一个虚光子而发生的。强子夸克模型,所有的重子都由3个夸克组成,所有介子都由一对正反夸克组成。为与泡利不相容原理一致,重子内的3个夸克,分别处于不同的状态。

夸克和电子内部,存在一种新的自由度,夸克和电子分处于该自由度的不同状态。电子内部的弦论是磁单极子弦图像,这不说。而重子作为整体,并不显示这种内部自由度的性质。这种情形,与颜色的情形十分相似----红、蓝、绿 3 原色,组合为无色;一种颜色和它的互补色,组合为无色。把强子的这种内部自由度,称为色自由度,夸克具有色荷,但电子没有。夸克和反夸克的色是互补的,3 种不同色荷的夸克,组成的重子是无色的,正反夸克组成的介子,也是无色的。循规蹈矩量子色动力学的特点是:

- 1)渐近自由。是说当传递的能量、动量非常大时,强相互作用就减弱到渐近于没有强相互作用的自由 状态。这是强相互作用类似宇宙的高能量状态,在低温下的一种表现。
- 2) 色禁闭, 在实验中, 人们不能见到自由的夸克和胶子。因为理论把 SU(2) ×U(1) 弱电统一理论和 SU(3) 量子色动力学组合起来, 就是 SU(3) ×SU(2) ×U(1) 标准模型, 但它不是统一的模型。因为它含有三个相互独

立的耦合常数,还有一些参数要通过实验来规定。电子以极大的能量深入到质子内部时,遭遇到的不是"软"的质子靶,而是和电子类似的点状"硬"核。比约肯提出的标度无关性,能解释强子深度非弹性散射的异常现象、喷注现象以及夸克的色禁闭问题。

2、循规蹈矩量子色动力学的历史与人物

1975年,H•乔基和格拉肖提出 SU(5)大统一理论,统一描述了弱、电磁、强相互作用,耦合常数为一个。SU(5)有 24 个规范场,即 8 个胶子场,3 个中间玻色子场,1 个光子场,多的 12 个 X 和 Y 规范场有待证明。并由此推出,质子会衰变成介子和轻子,并计算出质子寿命小于一万四千亿亿亿年,可实验证明大于三万三千亿亿亿年,没有得到社会的承认。

- 1) 1954年,杨振宁和他的合作者米尔斯,将对易的U(1)) 规范群对称性定域化方法,推广到非对易的SU(2) 规范对称性,建立了定域化的杨-米尔斯规范场理论。如把颜色自由度的SU(3) 非对易规范对称性定域化,也可得到与颜色SU(3) 联系在一起的杨-米尔斯场。这就称为色动力学。杨-米尔斯非对易规范场,包含的规范场粒子,如色动力学中的胶子,具有自相互作用和理论的可重整化性。计算中的高能无穷发散总能,被重整化到几个实验观测量中去;而会得到与实验符合的结果。
- 2) 20 世纪 60 年代中期,在量子色动力学建立之前,著名物理学家比约肯猜测到高能轻子散射下,会出现标度不变,便被美国斯坦福电子加速器中心(SLAC)的电子在核子上深度非弹性实验证实。这种标度不变是在核子中的成分自由运动的暗示。这是量子色动力学渐近自由的先期的实验暗示。
- 3) 20 世纪 70 年代中期,高能物理学家们发现很难用当时流行的散射矩阵模型来解释深度非弹性散射实验数据,费曼由此提出了部分子模型。但问题的真正解决要等到渐进自由的发现。三位理论物理学家格罗斯、维尔切克和玻利泽的计算,表明夸克相互作用强度随能标的增加而减弱,这种奇特的现象解释了在实验数据中发现的标度率。因此在高能下相互可以用微扰方法来很好地处理。但是在低能下相互作用强度很强,微扰方法就失效了。

至今量子色动力学仍然是一个没有被完全解决的问题。

- 4) 20 世纪 60 年代中期,我们国内科学家们是率先把夸克作为实体来看待的,并建议用层子代替夸克,称这物体最小单元,可惜层子这一名称,没有在世界上流行开来。而那时认识夸克,除了具有自旋、电荷等最子数,还具有所谓的味道。至今已经发现的夸克有 u,d,s,c,b,t 六种味道。实际上开始时所认识的三种味道的夸克,是其中的 u,d,s。它们的质量小,现代被称为轻夸克。夸克的反粒子,被称为反夸克。每种味道的夸克,都有对应的反夸克。反夸克的量子数全部是反的。夸克是物质结构向小尺度方向探讨。
- 5) 1964年,格林伯格引入了夸克的"颜色"概念----三个夸克全同,那就给它们来个编号或着上"颜色"(红、黄、蓝),从而不再违反泡利原理了。这样一来,每味夸克就有三种颜色,夸克的种类一下子由原来的 6 种扩展到 18 种,再加上它们的反粒子,那么自然界一共有 36 种夸克,它们和轻子(如电子、μ子、τ子及其相应的中微子)、规范粒子(如光子、三个传递控制夸克轻子衰变的弱相互作用的中间玻色子、八个传递强(色)相互作用的胶子)一起组成了 61 种自旋态世界。加上希格斯质量粒子,就是 62 种自旋态世界,这得到了不少实验的支持,并发展成量子色动力学。
- 6) 20 世纪 90 年代中期,塞伯和威滕用他们发展的四维空间量子场论,证明磁单极凝聚也会导致夸克幽禁。夸克幽禁口袋模型,实际可看成截面是圈态,再把圈态作自旋,如作体旋的结果。圈态收缩是圈线,这和弦理论有联系。如夸克,被认为绑在弦的两端,而这条弦却难以断裂。即使一旦断裂,断裂处生成一对正反夸克,原来的强子碎裂为两个新的强子,从而自由的夸克从来不可能出现。而既然胶子带色荷,胶子之间也会有色磁吸引力,从而色力线被拉紧呈平行状,就如一个带电电容器两板,因为有平行的电力线因而彼此有吸引一样,夸克之间也有类似这种吸引力----格点规范理论的面积定律,证明夸克之间有线性禁闭势存在。李政道的截面真空色荷反屏蔽圈态模型,如作体旋,是口袋模型;再作截面是弦模型。
  - 3、循规蹈矩量子色动力学与弦论图像。

弦论电磁场,电力线图像用力线描述。两个相反的色荷之间有力线相连接。弦论量子色动力学,力线不像两个相反电荷之间的电力线那样分散在空间,而是集中在两个色荷的连线上形成一根弦。如果把这种情况,与穿入第二类弦论超导体中的磁力线相比,这时磁力线受超导体的排斥而形成细管。弦论规范场力线的弦中,带有正比于弦的长度的能量,当两个色荷之间的距离增加趋于无穷时,弦所带的能量也将趋于无穷。在此以前弦可以断裂,产生一对新的相反的电荷。每段弦的两端都有一对相反的色荷。无论是哪种情况,都不能把两个色荷分开到大的距离。因此这个图像给出了弦论色禁闭。

1)对这个弦论图像的一个支持,来自格点规范理论。在格点规范理论中,连续的时空被离散的格点所代替。弦论规范场和与它作用的费密场,分别定义在联接相邻格点的线和格点本身所组成的点阵上。拉氏函数满足离散格点上的规范不变性。当两个格点间的距离 a 趋于零时,格点规范理论趋于连续时空的弦论规范理论。

与连续时空弦论规范理论的渐近自由相对应,在格点规范理论中,如果固定某个物理量的数值,则耦合常数 g 随格点间的距离 a 减小而减小。在 a 趋于零时,格点规范理论可以用弱耦合展开,它趋于连续理论的微扰论。在 a 大时, g 的值大。应当用强耦合展开,即展开成的幂级数。在强耦合极限下,可证明非交换群格点规范理论中,两个色荷之间的力线,聚集成弦,因而有色禁闭。

- 2)为证明连续理论有色禁闭,还需要证明在耦合由强变弱时,色禁闭的性质不消失。在电子计算机上用蒙特一卡罗法,对格点数不多的点阵进行研究的结果表明,对于一段中间的 g 值计算结果,可以同时与色禁闭的弦和连续理论的渐近自由微扰展开式一致。这个结果支持连续时空的弦论规范理论,有色禁闭的性质。格点规范理论的研究没有发现在 g 变小的过程中,存在解除色禁闭的相变。虽然如此,连续时空弦论规范理论的色禁闭,还只是一种有某些根据的猜测,至于强子谱的研究更是处于开始的阶段。
- 3) 循规蹈矩量子色动力学与超对称大统一理论是,超对称认为在超对称变换中,把玻色场换成费米场,费米场换在玻色场,有一类场论体系能够保持不变。这类场论体系称为超对称场论体系,它还可以通过变换引进引力场。但困难有,在夸克以下,特别是引进引力子,还没有众多的观察现象来证明。超弦理论则认为,随着对粒子层次的深入,不应还把粒子看作一个数学上的点,而应看成长度大致为 10 的负 33 次方厘米的极短弦上各种振动的表现形式,然后用这种弦元素构造宇宙。
- 4) 循规蹈矩量子色动力学虽说能够预测质子和中子的质量。可是实际方程是非常令人困惑难解的。据2010年报道,一个欧洲的研究团队,现在介绍了用量子色动力学来计算粒子质量的最大型的计算努力,方法包括将空间与时间作为某四维晶格的一部分,其中的离散点,则沿着行列以一定的间隔排列。他们解决了一些晶格,越来越精细的方程,并用它们的结果来推断与闭联集世界相关的解式。他们计算的质子、中子及其它"轻强子"(同时组成夸克的其它粒子,但它们的生命周期非常短暂)的质量,与通过实验所测得的质量相符合,证明了弦论标准模型,正确地描述了质子、中子及其它轻强子的质量的由来。因此它对可见宇宙(包括太阳、地球、我们自己以及所有我们周围的物体)质量的99%,可进行预测。

夸克模型是基础,量子色动力学是继往开来。夸克模型是第一,量子色动力学是第二。杨振宁和李政道争第一,第二,整得冤冤不解。没意思。实际"谁笑在最后,谁笑得最好",所以第一,强;第二,也雄。例如,盖尔曼是上世纪50年代的科学天才,维尔切克是上世纪70年代的科学天才。上世纪50年代27岁的盖尔曼,就成为美国加州理工学院教授。他凭着50年代的科学实验,1961年预言的两个新粒子存在,3年就被实验发现了。接着1963年他提出了夸克模型。10年后,维尔切克还是大卫·格罗斯教授的一个研究生的时候,1973年他就和格罗斯一起创立了夸克反屏蔽的"渐进理论",成为量子色动力学的奠基人之一,也一起获得2004年的诺贝尔物理学奖。

格罗斯在理论物理,尤其是规范场、粒子物理和超弦理论等方面有一系列杰出的研究成果。他是杂化弦理论的发明人之一。1985年当选为美国科学与艺术学院院士,1986年当选美国国家科学院院士。2006年当选国际弦理论会议主席。格罗斯的光辉也许盖过了维尔切克。但格罗斯的理论太超前,他的超弦理论、杂化弦理论发明,由于实验更难做,在我们国内更难普及。然而维尔切克轻松释解弦理论,说弦就是量子力学里的波函数,而且还把弦扩张成网格理论,成为21世纪新以太论的先声。这说明,在世界科学发现的竞争中,是继往开来,有第一,也有第二;第一是新发现,具备有价值,第二在此基础上的新发现,也具备有价值。

但类似刘武青等先生,他们作为业余学者,却相信科学发现只有第一,没有第二;只有第一才是新发现,才具备价值。这种观点来自哪里呢?除杨振宁和李政道外,也许还来自国内老一代科学家的误导。例如有人说,"1929年年底,赵忠尧把论文交给了密立根。但两三个月过去了,密立根也没有发表任何意见。原因在于,这项实验结果让他感到很吃惊,也与他的预期不相符,他不太敢相信这一结果的正确性。赵忠尧有点急了,因为在科学发现的竞技场上,是只有第一没有第二的,科研成果披露的先后往往决定着一项研究的命运"。

然而事实是,法拉第发现电磁纠缠是第一,麦克斯韦以类似流体数学方程,释解电磁纠缠,预言电磁波存在,成为第二。普朗克发明量子论是第一,爱因斯坦以释解光电效应,把量子粒子论扩张到微观的真实中,成为第二。玻尔、薛定谔、海森堡、狄拉克继续完善量子论,成为第三、第四。都在世界称雄。科学发现只有第一,没有第二的误导,使国内难出大师,也毒害了大批的"科学愤青",他们把推翻前人的科学发现以抬高自己的创新,作为回应库恩科学革命范式不恰当的号角。当然,也事出有因。类似量子电动力学革命中

的分裂,是爱因斯坦离开了量子革命阵营,钻进了统一场论的研究中。而量子色动力学革命中的分裂,是盖尔曼离开了超弦革命阵营,钻进了复杂系统论的研究中。

但作为旗帜,盖尔曼代表循规蹈矩量子色动力学,维尔切克代表与时俱进,两派会存在下去。而且反过来,已经影响到了我们国内的教学、出版、科普。例如类似大多数见诸文本的量子色动力学解释,说半个世纪多年的科学实践进展,已使强相互作用的研究,尤其是对量子色动力学(QCD)的研究,已经形成一个庞大的学科方向,或已成为一个单独的学科,即强子物理。但这只是人类对夸克之间的相互作用的确立,仅是由一种非阿贝尔群规范场论描写强子之间和原子核之间的相互作用。因此开展对QCD的理论研究和实验研究,只是导致对微观各种形态物质的基本构造有最终的理解和认识,只是能够利用QCD对大量的、丰富多彩的强子物理现象,从地球上的核物理现象到早期宇宙的物质形态,从物质微观结构到宇宙尺度的星系结构,有定量的理解和定量的预言,只是最终去发现和确立自然界的基本规律。

但是以上说法,有作茧自缚之嫌。因为从 QCD 导出的理论研究和实验研究,还可以对宏观化学能、电能、核能和机械能等工程理论和实验,进行的回采。并在宏观水平上提取量子色动能,和对医学、生物、生理等现象联系量子色动能,而成为对在我们面前仍有许多未能得到解决问题,甚至是一系列根本问题,求得解决的思路。

因此循规蹈矩的 QCD 介绍,就显得死气沉沉,好像 QCD 真和新儒学的复兴无关、无缘。这是不真实的。例如前面 QCD 循规蹈矩把散射实验中的夸克说得很有规律,实际并不是这样。例如除专门论述"量子夸克"的书籍外,很少有人提到"海夸克",连维尔切克也是这样。因为这是结构信息,每次散射实验也许都不一样。海夸克是夸克海,即在显微镜下的图像,价夸克沉浸在不断变化的低能胶子、夸克和反夸克的"海"中。质子内部存在大量的软夸克和软胶子,是 QCD 理论理解最艰难的问题。但循规蹈矩的 QCD,却轻描淡写在教导我们。

#### 三、21 世纪新儒学何时走进孔子学院

现在来说,为什么 21 世纪新儒学是量子色动力学? 也许这里的疑问很多,如儒学是文科,量子色动力学是理科,难道文科和理科没有区别? 儒学是中国人创建的,量子色动力学是外国人建立的,难道中国人做的学问要让外国来做?而且还要"对比百家,独尊量子色动力学",这还了得?量子色动力学既然存在与时俱进与循规蹈矩两派,还能做"独尊"的科学?等等。要回答这些问题,首先要回答儒学的精神是什么?

1、我们今天说,儒学的精神是整合。量子色动力学也含有整合,两者是一脉相承的。

为什么呢?儒学之起源,史无定论,但儒学称为儒家学,起源于东周春秋时期,和法家、墨家、道家、阴阳家等诸子百家并列,是千真万确的。那时儒家虽然影响最大,但并没有形成汉代以来那么大的生产力。汉人与儒学难分难解,就在于从汉朝开始,儒家学整合政权、整合经济、整合文化、整合宗教、整合人伦、整合社会等,才有天下国家的意识、内涵。这要提到汉代董仲舒等人,向汉武帝提出"罢黜百家,独尊儒术"的主张,并能实行之,在以后世代立下许多汗马功劳,才真正有儒学之说的大地位,才成为中国文化之主脉的。

1) 以此分析 20 世纪的新儒学及其当前儒学发展的主要取向。

中国儒学,或说传统儒家思想,向近代转化,或说与近代西方文化连结、融通起来,有人说是从康有为开始的。康有为对孔教有一个全而简的说法:"孔子之道,其本在仁,其理在公,其法在平,其制在文,其体在各明名分,其用在与时进化。"他认为,"仁"以"通"为第一整合,而"通"的体现就是"平等"。这是康有为把儒家孔、孟思想与近代西方民主政治学说和哲学理论联系在一起的创新,虽然生搬硬套、牵强附会、幼稚可笑,但也不可否认,他读懂了"整合"中多少包含着某些为使传统儒学向现代转化的探索和努力。

20 世纪 20 年代以后,由于清皇朝已被推翻。在西方文化冲击下,如何汇通儒学与西方文化,如何继承和发扬儒学的优秀传统,以保持民族的自主精神等问题,这时涌现出了以接续儒学道统为己任,以服膺宋明儒家心性之学为主要特征,会通西学,谋求儒学现代化的一个思想流派,学界称之为现代新儒学。以粱漱溟、熊十力、牟宗山等人为代表的新儒家,形成了新陆王学(新心学)。以冯友兰为代表的新儒家,形成了新程朱学(新理学)。梁漱溟尊孔崇儒于中西印三种文化形态中,断言调和持中的儒家文化最有前途。冯友兰则以真际实际两世界构筑庞大的新理学体系。但他们的整合都是有限的,并背离儒学"整合"大意,且遇上了中国革命走向社会主义趋势的硬道理。因为,孔子、孟子在修身与治国方面,提出的实践规范和原则,虽然都是很具体的,但同时又带有浓厚的理想主义成分,是更多地寄希望于人的本性的自觉。当代新儒家第二代、第三代的学者们,虽好似更会汇通中西文化,热爱中华传统文化,努力以现代精神诠释儒家思想理论,使之适应现代社会,

其用心良苦,精神也实在令人钦佩,但大多数人也仍然是以文科来读儒学"整合"大意和中国趋势 走向社会主义的硬道理的。

当然也有挺身而出,从理科转身文科来"整合"的旗手。如鲁迅和郭沫若先生。鲁迅先生从医学转身文学,呼唤革命,拥护中国共产党。郭沫若先生从医学转身革命,参加了中国共产党。共产主义是一种政治信仰或社会状态。作为一种社会状态,与社会主义和资本主义等的区别在于共产主义社会的财富是按需分配的,每个人都尽其所能为社会作出贡献,而依照自己的需求索取。即共产主义社会是在高度发达的社会生产力的基础上,实行各尽所能、按需分配。而儒学的先驱在我国古代,设想的"大同"社会,就与共产主义社会有一定相似之处。为了这种"整合",在上世纪最黑暗的 40 年代,郭沫若先生写了一本书叫"地下的笑声",其中有一篇类似科幻小说的故事,写在上海文庙,孔子与马克思约会,两人在那里就"大同"社会与共产主义社会有一定相似之处,进行了讨论。但到 1966 年文革开始,郭沫若先生在《人民日报》公开宣布,他的类似东西应该通通烧毁。

笔者热读《马恩列斯论共产主义社会》一书还是在少年时代。1959年以后,那时毛泽东同志已经少提及《马恩列斯论共产主义社会》这本书了。但在家乡那个偏僻的农村,笔者却得到这本书,那是一个在外工作的叔父下放回农村,送给笔者父亲的。《马恩列斯论共产主义社会》由人民出版社于1958年8月正式出版,约17万字。1958年8月人民出版社第一版发行后,上海、沈阳、武汉、重庆等地先后重印,仅上海人民出版社于这年9月便印刷了20万册。有人说,编印这样一部书,明显与当时大跃进和人民公社化运动中,所设想的社会发展建设思路有关。这本书在当时的影响十分广泛。可惜的是,人民公社化运动这样的探索,实践已经证明是走了弯路。识字不多又老实巴交的父亲不会对这本书有兴趣,笔者却饿着肚子一字一句去读它。那时共产主义各尽所能、按需分配的原则还被处于社会主义阶段实行的各尽所能、按劳分配原则所代替。

如果说,梁漱溟、熊十力、马一浮、钱穆、冯友兰、贺麟等他们,都在汇通中西方文化的前提下,来解释儒学,发展儒学,乃至建立起某种新的儒学体系。但都是重视文科。儒学当然世代扩张的也是文科。从文科的意义上来说,儒学提取的是一种精神力量,即一个国家,政权不变,人民不变,也能让它发挥更大的"能量"。即儒学及其儒学整合的本质是提取"能量"。这里有精神能量,相对必然就有物质能量。从大跃进和人民公社到改革开放以来,实践探索告诉我们,中国不变,人民不变,执政党不变,甚至一个单位、一个部门不变,只要与时俱进,生产力也会发生大变,释放出巨大的"能量"。

而就是在这近半个世纪里,量子色动力学已经诞生和成长起来。

如果说,人类提取的化学能、电能、核能、机械能,瞄准的是原子和原子核的不变与可变,那么由于核污染、核恐怖和石油的碳污染、高碳化,似乎变革原子和原子核的不变与可变已经走到尽头。而量子色动力学则昭示出,质子不变与可变的变革,可以提取更大的去核化、去石油化的能源,这就是量子色动能。共产主义各尽所能、按需分配的原则和量子色动能的对应,是关于"夸克球"的设想。据新华社 1997 年 9 月 3 日伦敦报导,欧洲核子研究中心的科学家提出"夸克球"的设想,认为若能制成此物质,可给人类提供巨大的能源。例如,我们中国类似首台核电蒸汽发生器那样,能自主研制、设计和制造成功量子色动能电百万千瓦级蒸汽发生器,并能形成批量生产量子色动能电站,及内部装的最为关键的量子色动激光器主设备那样的大规模,各尽所能、按需分配向全球投入用于量子色动电领域的产能扩建和技术提升,那么儒学的"平天下",真的可以想象。即这里的"平"以是"和平"、"和谐"为第一要义,解说为"和平天下"、"和谐天下",有的可以想象。即这里的"平"以是"和平"、"和谐"为第一要义,解说为"和平天下"、"和谐天下",而不以"打"为第一要义。从这一点上联系儒学的精神是"整合"和儒学的本质是提取"能量"来说,量子色动力学如果来回在社会和质子变革求稳中,寻求启示和探索"整合"与提取"能量",这正是21世纪新儒学量子色动力学,和旧儒学及 20 世纪新儒学的区别。

2) 人文儒学与理科儒学,类似"科学中国人"的语法之争。

人文与理科应用是有矛盾的。1981年,笔者调到刚恢复的盐亭县科协工作,8月初盐亭全县发生大水灾,很多地方的棉田被淹,县科协常务副主席梁明全和县农业局农艺师常俭朴同志,写出抗灾保棉技术的科普材料,在县政协的支持下,县科协准备办一份铅印科普小报,该刊上正可发表此文。受广东杂志《科学广东人》专栏和《科学美国人》杂志刊名的影响,这份科普小报就以《科学盐亭人》的刊名向县委宣传部申报审批。县委宣传部同意后,《科学盐亭人》科普小报印出来了,在向灾区分发的过程中,县长兼科协主席的何惠同志才通知梁明全同志说不能发,说是县委常委会的决定。科协的同志感到莫名其妙。笔者与县委常委。组织部长杨尚礼同志察看灾情走在一起时,杨

部长又问起这件事情,才知是县委统战部、办公室等几个老秘书、老大哥秘书,说《科学盐亭人》刊名语法都不通,发出去丢盐亭县的脸面,闹到县委常委会上去了。我们和这些老秘书、老大哥秘书都是熟人,平时对他们谈儒说圣都尊敬,不想他们逗硬起来不饶人。实际这事早有争论,科协的同志说:"科学盐亭人"是一种去"的"语法结构,如"红的花",可以说成"红花",类此,"科学盐亭人"就类似"学科学、用科学的盐亭人",而且在《发刊词》也说了。他们不同意,说没有先例。科协又拿出广东杂志《科学广东人》专栏和《科学美国人》杂志给他们看,他们又说盐亭不是广东、美国,如要用去"的"结构,就到广东、美国去办!

县委宣传部办公室主任李芳同志,是县委书记李兴元同志的爱人,她通知县科协申报被审批后,他们就闹到县委书记李兴元和县长何惠同志那里去。他们人少能量大,为平息机关的争论,在县委常委会李兴元和何惠同志作出停发决定。事情了解清楚后,有人建议按儒学的"长幼有序"处理,老秘书、老大哥秘书在县委搞文字工作多年,是老师,是长者,我们尊重,科协同意不用此刊名。但应说明,"科学盐亭人"的刊名及里面内容,并没有政治错误,现在是大灾抗灾的非常时期,抗灾救灾比脸面重要,抗灾保棉技术等科普材料应该发下去。这样梁明全同志去找何惠同志谈后,何惠同志本身是科协主席,也感到有事他也应承担一定的责任,于是就向这几个老秘书、老大哥秘书作了解释:为抗灾救灾,这期创刊号还发出去,下不再用《科学盐亭人》刊名,"一河水"才消下去。上世纪末,国家《科学中国人》创刊,科协的同志立即给当时的主编写信,说明盐亭的这个情况,请他们也考虑类似这些老秘书、老大哥的意见。如果真要办,我们也表示祝贺。"科学中国人"毕竟长大了。

2) 徐光宪院士和《物质结构》一书的贡献。

三个夸克全同,来个编码或着上红、黄、蓝"颜色"就不全同,也不再违反泡利原理。化解人文与理科儒学联系的矛盾,最好是学量子色动力学。徐光宪院士的《物质结构》一书作出了启示。1959年该书要出版,庐山会议批彭德怀同志刚过,"物质无限可分"问题也许使徐先生好是很为难。因为1953年,毛主席就谈过物质结构的问题。主席说:"墨子在公元前5世纪就提出'端'是组成物质的最小成分,比外国人提得早。"主席还提及《庄子》一书中"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"这句话。

"物质无限可分说"的讨论,是把 21 世纪新儒学量子色动力学过早地落脚到了 20 世纪,也是把中国特色的量子色动力学和中国的传统文化联系了起来。因为量子色动力学寻找微观与宏观之间"语言"不通的沟通,类似朗兰兹纲领预言数学某些表面上与毫不相干的领域之间可能存在的"语言"不通而能沟通的联系一样。徐先生的《物质结构》书第一章的绪论,绕不开这个问题。这又被转化为是一道语法难题:

- A、按普朗克的量子论,"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"最后应该打"?",即表示不可分。
- B、但按当时社会的斗争形势,最后应该打"。",即顺其意,表示物质是无限可分的。
- C、如按薛定谔的"死猫活猫"量子论、玻尔的互补量子论,海森堡的测不准量子论,最后应该同时打"。?"。即类似"可分"和"不可分"的矛盾,可以同时并列在一个物质点。这是在"宇宙极问"中常遇到的拓扑斯逻辑问题。

量子色动力学可以用3种编码或对应红、黄、蓝3种"颜色",也能表达一个物质点的不全同。但一个物质点不只3种编码。例如,笛卡尔的三个坐标还有3维编码。爱因斯坦的相对论加上时间,扩张为4维编码。杨振宁---米尔斯规范方程的广义电荷,正负又是两种编码。也许那时全国许多人文或理科的儒学家们,对"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"最后应该如何打标点的事情,与量子力学的编码联系,根本很少去想。一个物质点的多重编码或堆垒编码,是一个多重纠缠或堆垒纠缠的量子态问题,也类似21世纪新以太论,落脚到了20世纪,虽然希尔伯特空间早有很好的表述,但希尔伯特仅是一种数学语言,并没有提出物理语言。

应该说徐院士是精通当时的量子力学的,但徐院士更是一个聪明人。他一定知道量子纠缠,就有量子退相干。退相干是对量子态的一种测量。测量结果真实可靠,就没有正确与错误之分。如薛定谔的"死猫活猫"量子纠缠,退相干一定是死猫或活猫,没有退相干再是"死猫活猫"纠缠的测量结果真实可靠。那么联系"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"的多重编码或堆垒编码纠缠的退相干,徐院士的老本行就是科学实验和科学测量的观察。这是理科的退相干,对文科的退相干是当时社会的实际,这无疑是"物质无限可分说"。所以徐院士避开了引用庄子的原话,而说是惠子讲的。且用白话文来解说,这是物质无限可分割的意思。

这样徐院士就避开了语法讨论难题,且一变双关。因为徐院士并没有丢掉一个物质点的多重编码或堆垒编码的暗示,他接着点到了墨子叫"端"的不能再可分的编码。这与普朗量子论中的"量子",被认为是物质和能量不可再分的结构单元,是对应的。其次,也许会使精通儒学经典或传统文化的人联系到惠子也有类似"点外无外,点内无内"不可分的话,而使"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"具有两种类似"可分"和"不可分"的矛盾,可以同时并列在一个物质点的拓扑斯逻辑里。这是徐院士的智慧,即使这也许只类似夸克编码或着色,是虚讨论。但徐院士有超前的科学思维,是不能否认的。即使当时徐先生并不知道后来盖尔曼的味夸克、夸克味;也不知道更后来维尔切克等渐进自由的色夸克、夸克色、海夸克、夸克海。

徐光宪院士《物质结构》一书一版再版,到 1978 年已是第 7 次再版,成为经典教科书的事实,说明理科退相干以实验事实说话。文科退相干以社会实际需求说话,是与时俱进的。所以 1959 年徐先生接下来,就能话锋一转,开始批判神权、统治阶级、唯心论对古代朴素的不可分的原子论的非难,和对辩证唯物主义关于物质与运动不可分割的攻击。从而也摆正和暗示了物质是无限可分论与当时社会实际的关系。但徐先生的这种把握,是有度的。例如除开"绪论"一章外,《物质结构》全书里面都是围绕当时已知的科学实验事实和成熟的数学运算,在讲解物质的结构的。这就很好解决了儒学理科和文科的分家问题,给 21 世纪中国新儒学量子色动力学的创立树立了一个好榜样。也指导了后来我国的层子模型研究。50 年后的 2009 年,徐先生获得全国最高科技奖,是当之无愧的。

21 世纪新儒学被徐光宪先生定格在 1959 年后的这 50 年,让 21 世纪新儒学理科与文科交融叠加,走进北京大学。也走进了上海,走进了上海师范大学。

#### 2、从马成金定律到朗兰兹纲领

2009 年 1 月,量子信息与健康上海论坛第二届大会在上海师范大学隆重召开。来自全国的代表,医学领域的最多,并集中北京、上海、南京、深圳等发达地区。观他们带来和介绍的电磁波等高新信息医疗仪器设备,以及发表的学术论文,其高度没有超过量子电动力学、电动力学的范围。只有上海代表,原国防科工委新能源试验开发基地副总工程师、上海恒变新能源研究所所长许驭先生,他向大会代表们公开讲述他与王洪成的"水变油"技术研究联系的亲身经历,其高度涉及到了量子色动力学的一些内容。这和 2010 年 6 月《中国科技财富》和 7 月《中国科学人》等杂志的长篇报道差不多。但正如《中国科学人》介绍,此项"氧核冷裂变"新能源项目的核心技术对外还是保密的,"不能讲、不敢讲"。有人把这称为许驭"不能讲不敢讲定理",或许驭定理。许驭先生的解释是:"在任何国家,无论国家拨款的原始创新,还是民间自发自费的千辛万苦原始创新,一旦事关国家兴衰成败,都会被列为国家级保密项目;自觉遵守国家保密法规并作出了重大贡献,国家绝对不会亏待个人;相反,如果在一定时期不谨慎造成泄密,除了给国家造成损失,个人的人身安全也无法得到保障"。科学有实验原则,还有保密原则,这是肯定的。如今天的原子弹。氢弹制造技术是保密的。但原子弹、氢弹的原理即使公布世界数十年,也不是哪个国家说制造就能制造的。这里有很多的技术细节也是关键。相反,原子弹、氢弹的原理的公布和大家继续探讨,也许在对和平利用核能的技术细节上,还有推动作用。于是在量子信息与健康上海论坛第二届大会上,马成金定律也同时被公布了。

马成金定律也被称为"水不变油"定律。马成金先生的解释是:在常温、常态和常规的化学操作下,不含相应的碳元素,纯水是不能变为汽油、柴油等油料物质的。相反,一大碗的纯水,只加极少量的食盐和金属钾配制的引发剂小颗药丸,水立即喷射出火花和白色的烟雾,很快满碗水都烧干。即水能燃烧。这是1984年马成金先生在四川盐亭县科协公开做的水"燃烧"喷射实验,盐亭县科协主席张应芃是主持人。由于实验具有爆炸性和有毒气体排放,县科协劝阻他不要做这种危险的实验。马成金先生说,水"燃烧"喷射药剂,主要是想献给国家造武器弹药。但正如严谷良先生对马成金说:"武器弹药用不着研究,国家有的是研制武器弹药的高级人才"。如得有关部门的允许和条件,马成金实验,任何大学或实验都能重复。

有人把马成金先生发现的以钾、钠元素配置的引发剂,称为土"夸克球",或可控的"量子色动激光器"。有人把马成金先生比作中国的贝克勒尔。他们讲,19世纪末,如果说贝克勒尔对天然放射性物质铀盐的发现,掀开了20世纪原子物理学的序幕,那么20世纪末马成金的发现,是掀开21世纪中国新儒学量子色动力学的序幕。因为马成金定律涉及的工作,虽然1993年《绵阳日报》有过披露,但解密钾、钠、氧、碳、氢元素之间的量子色动几何和量子色动化学原理,是在2009年量子信息与健康上海论坛上才开始逐步公开的。从马成金定律到许驭定理,2009年以后国内的互联网论坛和杂志,作了大量的报导。发表了如:《两大科学发现的引路人》、《氧核冷裂变----改变世界的新能源技术革命》、《评刘延勋水变油卡宾乃春猜想》、《许驭氧核裂变解密水不变油水燃烧》、《从比约肯到量子色动化学》、《费伦教授与量子色动化学》、《访问李新洲解读拓扑斯与朋远来》等大量文章。

贝克勒尔的铀盐,并不等于原子弹、氢弹的爆炸,也不等于原子核物理学、量子力学、量子电动力学的诞生。贝克勒尔仅仅是发现了一种与它们有联系的自然放射性现象。同样,马成金配制的钾、钠元素土"夸克球"引发纯水的喷射燃烧,沾到一些类似"真空能"的边,但也并不等于大型强子对撞机、正负电子对撞机的碎片、喷注实验,也不等于量子色动力学、超弦理论。相反,马成金先生受王洪成"水变油"宣传的影响和吸引,后来更专注柴油掺水的乳油技术推销,并以自己中专水平的化学知识解释是联键剂的作用。21世纪的新儒学量子色动力学有中国人自己完成的部分,如与杨振林、李政道、钱学森、华罗庚、陈省身、苏步青、丘成桐等科学家的科学成果或科学导向都有关。下面我们慢慢道来。

#### 1) 从刘月生定律到大型强子对撞机

文化部部长蔡武同志说:过去有些人否定传统文化,认为不科学、愚昧、落后,鼓吹洋的比中国的好,新的比旧的好,现代的比古代的好。这是一种民族虚无主义、数典忘祖。也一直有些人夜郎自大,认为中国传统文化是世界上最好的文化,具有无法比拟的优势和特点,搞"复古"。这是一种狭隘的民族主义、"国粹主义"。现在又有人搞实用主义,不分良莠、精华糟粕,只要有利可图,就打着保护、弘扬传统文化的旗号搞开发利用。这是对传统文化缺乏敬畏之心,浮躁、功利。第一种人鼓吹的"洋",仍然是那些上了教科书、众人知晓的东西。第二种人更不用说了,如有人说:老子在两千多年前就发现了各种粒子它妈。靠什么?人体意识成像技术。这是研究人体和自然最尖端的最先进的"仪器",一分钱都不用花。道的子孙永远不抛弃用道的规律探索宇宙,两千多年前就实现了现代化,还要求什么现代化?第三种人知道的实用东西,也和第一、第二种人差不多,是那些上了教科书或社会上众人知晓的国内外的东西。所以在"自创"和"无神"的召唤下,20世纪的儒学面临老、中、青大量各种新论,挑战 20世纪类似相对论、量子论、基因论等科学成就。

21 世纪互联网普及后,这种"繁荣"与"钱学森之问"成为矛盾:中国老、中、青发新论的人,很多称自己是大师,可得诺贝尔奖,钱学森之问却说中国没有培养大量大师。刘月生定律解读了这项难题:"向西方传统科学真理观念的挑战,又要求得到本国西方传统科学权威人物的认同,才被社会认可。这本身就一个悖论"。这三种人早在清朝洋务运动开始后,就有之。刘月生先生针对国内这三种人的新论,如何形成合力振兴中华,研究了半个多世纪。

刘月生安徽人,年少过继给腿残又无子的伯父。中学毕业他到北京求学水利电力科技,品学兼优。奇怪的是他家庭成份高,1957年的反右却是学校一名积极分子。毕业后他被分配到西北水利电力设计院,但他私下发现有人对他反右当积极分子有意见。刘月生先生为了寻找振兴中华提取合力的真理,1960年刘月生先生决然从理科转身文科,再报考新疆大学马列主义与哲学系,被录取进入深造,后成为新疆医科大学的教授。刘月生先生把马列主义、毛泽东思想与信息论结合研究,1989年他出版了《自然论纲》一书,提出了"结构信息"和"交换信息"两个概念。今天用查尔斯•塞费的《解码宇宙》一书来解释,交换信息就是"分开"的信息,类似量子信息论里的"退相干"。反过来,结构信息就是"叠加"的信息,类似多元一体或双重的"纠缠"。对刘月生的"结构信息"和"交换信息"概念,有个更经典的说法是,结构信息就是"实验",交换信息就是"看书"。用此定义来解决他的刘月生定律悖论,无数中国老、中、青发的新论,之所以挑战求不到饱学西方传统科学权威人物的认同,不全是这些人脑子出了毛病,而是这些"新论"绝大多数是属于交换信息。即使他们做的实验,要不别人不能重复,要不是类似"许驭定理"拒人门外。结构信息在哪儿?

实验有实践的意思。毛主席在他的著名《实践论》中说:"你要知道梨子的滋味,你就得变革梨子,亲口吃一吃。你要知道原子的组成同性质,你就得实行物理学和化学的实验,变革原子的情况"。但今天变革原子的物理学和化学实践已经深入到变革质子。实验却从普通的化学实验到变革原子、质子的实验,都有一个特点:关注"喷注"和"碎片",甚至所有的实践也是类似在关注"喷注"和"碎片"的广义行为。对于个人和少数集体来说,实验有近似各尽所能、按需分配的原则。那么有没有一种实验,它喷涌的原始数据流,需要全世界成千上万的电脑及网格,才能来分担这一负载;需要全世界成千上万掌握最高、最新、最尖端科技交换信息的科学家,才能来分析、操作、计算、理解和制造呢?有。即有一种近似把全世界纳入各尽所能、按需分配的原则的实践和实验,那就是攻坚量子色动力学的类似欧洲核子中心耗资 100 多亿欧元建成的大型强子对撞机(LHC)。因有我们中国科学家,在世界很多科技大国、强国中,我国也是参加国之一。

大型强子对撞机也有"许驭定理",那就是 LHC"幕后英雄"搞量子色动力学,他们打的是所谓找"上帝粒子"和暗物质是烟幕弹,保密的是寻找未来新能源,是找能继续取得全球人类通向未来道路的控制权,类似共产主义把全世界纳入各尽所能、按需分配原则的可控、可操作的工具或产品"夸克球"之一。爱因斯坦的相对论其实是一个"距离定理",是说对同样一件事情,即使每个人的观察看起来相互矛盾,也不能说哪一个观测者的信息比别人更准确,或者不如别人的准确。即每个人的信息都同样准确。因为相对论本质也

是信息论,它解释出现不同的原因是,真理如同光速肯定只有一个,但每个观测者之间有类似"距离"的差异。缩短这种认识"距离",答案自然会一样。而人们往往把大家看得一般高,忽视了这种"距离"。

正是有这种"距离",我国很多老、中、青发交换信息新论的人,骂 LHC "幕后英雄"是"劳民伤财"。目前又在有意建造更大型的直线对撞设备,更是"劳民伤财"。其实,这是一种短视。因为不在这种"距离"上的人,他想搞 LHC"劳民伤财"都不行?拿给他 LHC"劳民伤财"都不行!我们13亿人中,就拿数千万的工程技术人员和高级学者,又有多少人懂得起量子色动力学高尖实践论?玩得转量子色动力学高尖实践论?所以实践论分类学是斤两计量器,一个人、一个单位,甚至一个团体、一个地域,有多少斤两?实践论分类学也能考量。而早在前苏联,斯大林同志认识到了这种"距离"。所以他才懂得起搞100万名数学家公务员这种秘密武器。西方的很多科技大国、强国"忘我之心不死",近300年来一直在公开或秘密打造数学家公务员队伍。而近300年来蔡武同志说的那三种人,很多却一直侥幸在玩"一手硬一手软"的游戏----文科儒学硬,理科儒学软。无异于错上加错。

所以蔡武同志说:要以敬畏之心对待传统文化。我们认为,敬畏传统文化,就是要学习古人西汉大儒董仲舒等敢于"罢黜百家,独尊儒术"之心。董仲舒这里"独尊"的要义,是"第一",反过来"罢黜"的要义,是"推后",即儒术第一,法家、道家,第二、第三等等。例如在董仲舒的儒学中,不仅接受和发扬了荀子的礼法并重、刑德兼用,而且还有墨家的"兼爱"、"尚同",乃至墨家的某些宗教色彩思想、阴阳家的阴阳五行学说等部分。但有不少反对儒学的人,却抓住"独尊"、"罢黜"的表面字眼,把"独尊"说成是"独裁",把"罢黜"说成是"打倒"。其实这是不对的。即使在今天,新华书店里连"厚黑学"的书籍也在大量出售。可知连"厚黑学"也并没有打倒,只是排在实用之后,而且历史上的统治者也是儒法并用,这也道出董仲舒等敢于"罢黜百家,独尊儒术"之心,是地道的儒学"排序"之意。21世纪的新儒学,提出"对比百家,独尊量子色动力学",也是继承地道的儒学"排序"之意,只是把量子色动力学排在前面而已。现在来回顾刘月生先生近60年来的传奇,他完成了从中学到西学、从文科到理科、从革命到开放的21新儒学框架的统一。

#### 2) 从钱学森的人体科学到量子色动力学

如果说儒学的"独尊"之理,是从稳定中提取"能量",那么钱学森同志的一生是 20 世纪到 21 世纪中,从中学到西学、从文科到理科、从革命到开放为国家、为人民探索提取"能量"作出巨大贡献和牺牲的英雄之一。2010 年钱学森同志倒在癌症的病痛的噩耗传来,笔者搞到万分地沉痛。钱学森同志是倒在人类的人体科学到量子色动力学探索的路上的。

笔者 1959 年从课堂上老师以"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世不竭"讲解物质无限可分说,感到了有一种提取"能量"的方法魅力:从普通化学实验的"喷注"和"碎片"的特点出发,化学方程式两边的平衡,关注的是分子式里的元素不变。而元素的不变,本质是元素里的质子数不变。抓住这个主要矛盾,那么化学方程式里质子不变,但质子里的夸克味、味夸克、海夸克、夸克海,它们因反屏蔽形成的广义色荷云,会不会也类似大自然的气象云层有打雷、闪电。下雨的时候呢?唐孝威先生发现"硬"辐射,夸克、反夸克和胶子有"三喷注"的信息传回国内,那么质子里的"软"辐射色荷云像什么样?夸克、反夸克和胶子的"软"辐射"喷注",与无机和有机的普通化学反应有没有互动作用?成为笔者计算的业余爱好。

因为真空的量子起伏、量子涨落,可以用卡西米尔效应的平板之间的吸引力来计量,人称"真空能"。平面几何和立体几何告诉我们,3个点可形成一个平面,8点可形成一个立方体。两个正三角形可形成一个六面体。立方体的平板卡西米尔效应比六面体的大。把这类"点"换成质子数,立方体变成了氧元素,六面体变成了碳元素。16个点可形成一个超立方体,对应元素是硫,在空气中可燃烧。12个点可形成两个六面体,对应元素是镁,在空气中可燃烧喷射。六面体加5个点可形成一个18面体,对应元素是钠,在纯水中可燃烧。19个点可形成一个立方体和一个18面体,对应元素是钾,在纯水中可燃烧喷射。以元素内质子数不变的几何形状变化这种堆垒分析,倍感笔者最尊敬的人之一华罗庚先生的堆垒数论的亲切。华罗庚先生的第一部数学经典名著《堆垒素数论》,是众所周知的。堆垒数论又称加性数论,是关于所谓加性问题的一个数论分支。

扩张这种堆垒的原子核内质子几何堆垒的量子色动力学分析,称为量子色动几何。那么"软"辐射的广义色荷云,不造成总体流动太大变化来生产粒子----生产和重新分布广义色荷,同时不对总的能量和动量流产生大的干扰,假设能提取朝相反方向运动的能量的化学反应,称为量子色动激光器或反冲辐射真空能。这种弱力能源的分析,类似属量子色动化学,可具体联系到水的氧中的质子色动几何,与钾、钠元素中的质子色动几何之间的虚粒子云的碎片、喷注干扰互动,通过精心安排的类似氢元素、碳元素中的质子色动几何卡

西米尔效应,实现不造成总体流动太大的相变,可提取巨大能量的比例吗?联系人体内的水循环,与钾、钠离子及其细胞通道的观控相对界的生理作用,生命科学可产生钱学森先生说的人体科学的革命。

1979年著名的上海《自然杂志》2卷5期同时发表了李政道先生的《夸克模型---今日的粒子物理》和中科院上海原子核研究所顾涵森同志的《气功"外气"物质基础的研究----微粒流的初步实验结果》两篇重要论文,显示了国内与国外科学中国人之间的巨大认知差异。

2009年量子信息与健康上海论坛期间,笔者与魏瑚同志作过交谈。魏瑚同志是化学家,也是老革命家。上世纪60年代初,她作上海中医研究所所长时,就支持过所里科学家对朝鲜科学家金凤汉教授的"凤汉管"和"金凤汉小体"经络发现进行验证。顾涵森同志作"外气"实验时,魏瑚同志是中科院上海原子核研究所的所长和书记,她又支持顾涵森做实验。但顾涵森同志的认识还停留电动力学或量子电动力学的高度。李政道先生的论文已经介绍了量子色动力学和他对夸克禁闭模型的一种新的反屏蔽解释,但顾涵森和以后其他的人体科学家,都没有把人体内的水循环与钾、钠离子及其通道观控相对界的量子色动化学,与李政道先生的量子色动力学联系起来。盐亭县科协叶眺新同志希望得到钱学森先生的干预,笔者也支持他给钱学森先生写信。

钱学森先生是很谦逊的人,对何祚庥先生十分尊重。1983 年 5 月 26 日钱学森同志亲自给盐亭县科协和叶眺新同志回信:"我因不是搞理论物理的,对你的议论没有评论的能力,而中国科学院理论物理研究所副所长何祚庥同志是此道行家,又热心于自然辩证法的研究,所以将文章转他了。他会答复你的"。何祚庥先生后来发起组织了"科学无神论"组织和"科学无神论网站",也许 2007 年 8 月 22 日、12 月 7 日、12 月 15 日,算是等到了何先生支持的书面"回信",因为在科学无神论网站和三思科学网站等发表的文章中说:在网上是公布了基本资料的,良忠先生 12 月 3 日写作了《难道又是娱乐大众的玩笑----评废除"伪科学"提法网络签名》,"这就构成《签名者简介》1.0 不完全版"。其文章中说:叶眺新,"城隍庙的老主顾,伪科学思想家,或曰自然哲学家"。而据四川省科普作协主席董仁威先生说,2003 年何祚庥先生到四川成都,一次开会董先生与何先生在主席台并坐,董先生问何先生:"你知道三旋理论吗?"何祚庥先生回答说:"那是伪科学",于是董仁威先生没有再问了。

我们对何祚庥先生是尊重的。也不会因何先生对三旋理论打压,就忘记了何先生一生中某些感人的地方:第一,钱学森先生归国,何先生受组织之令,南下深圳迎接,是有热情的。即钱先生也最早认识何先生。第二,何先生一生对爱因斯坦的相对论持基本肯定态度,至今没变。第三,何先生是最早向国家建议研制原子弹、氢弹的科学家之一。第四,虽然崔珺达教授是我们的朋友,我们仍支持何先生反崔教授的无夸克论,因为何先生是对的。第五,2004年维尔切克等因夸克的渐近自由获诺贝尔物理奖后,何先生反悔谈到曾被他们排斥过的刘耀阳教授,对层子也有类似的"颜色"分层的看法是对的认识。第五、何先生是最早提出质子等可分的"层子模型"的科学家之一,即使他反对唐孝威院士的质子可衰变论。等等。

何祚庥院士在科学殿堂不可动摇的理论物理学地位,在他身边的人没有不感到的。吴新忠博士是南京大学、浙江大学、武汉大学培养出来的高材生,又在上海交通大学任教,他据了解的情况劝笔者说,不要去惹何院士。意思是,惹何院士等于是撞刘月生定律。

刘月生定律实际等于实验最大定律。三旋理论有实验证明吗?你有做实验的条件吗?三旋理论的最终目的也是寻找从自然提取能量。文化大革命的十年,正是国外科技强国确立量子色动力学的十年,中国在这十年内大学和高中停止公开招考学生,损失的不是这种知识,而是对这种知识精神的认知。钱学森先生和何祚庥先生都是亲自为国家研制原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船的。我们把这类工程涉及到的科学知识称为"无神论",是说这类工程都能用量子电动力学以下的科学知识解答,它们类似味夸克、夸克味,是循规蹈矩的;要提取的能量,已经是最大的能量,反过来说已经无能量再可提取了。而提出"层子模型"也是为把我国打造成最有科学长杆的国家,因为1966年的北京世界科学家大会,"层子模型"被认为是比"夸克"更先进的理论。所以1969年"九大"召开,钱学森被选为中央候补委员,他在大会中发言,满怀热情地提出中国的科学"要准备留洋了"。当武汉高校的"九大"代表会后回校传达这个喜讯时,作为青年学生的笔者高兴得难于言表。也同钱先生一样对何祚庥先生充满厚望。

但钱先生和何先生研制原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船应该知道核污染,以及宇宙射线对人体的伤害。在原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船的科学知识外,有没有隐秩序?有没有再能提取的能源?钱学森先生十分关注国外科学强国的研究进展。随着量子色动力学的确立,量子力学中玻姆的隐秩序理论被翻了出来。而且此时"四人帮"的打倒,四川唐雨耳朵认字在全国引起争论,钱学森先生把玻姆的隐秩序理论和人体科学联系起来,希望从人体科学中提取不同于原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船知识的能量。正是在这种背景下,钱学森同志介入了人体科学。

钱学森把后半生的热情献给了人体科学,本想得到何祚庥这位最好朋友和同志的理论物理权威的支持,然而得到的却是反戈一击。何祚庥先生批判人体特异功能,应该说有些是对的。何祚庥先生应该说是懂量子色动力学,并且也在研究超弦理论。但量子色动力学被认为只是强相互作用理论,需要大型强子对撞机、正负电子对撞机做实验。而很多气功学者和气功师,以何先生层子自创为榜样,什么"太极子"、"玄子"等虚设粒子满天飞,而且有一些高层人生的支持,他们要求取得合法的地位。四川大学吴邦惠教授是核物理学家,她支持人体特异功能也仅限于量子电动力学以下的知识,就不说科学殿堂其他的专家了。何先生自然拒绝别人学自己。这里没有量子色动几何和量子色动化学的变通,是难于进入人体科学的。

科学是沿着科学第一者躺下的道路,继续前进,才有科学第二、第三,才有科学长杆的阶梯。而不是沿着科学第一者相反的方向打倒第一者前进,也不是只读第一者的原著,就能前进。例如盖尔曼是夸克创立的第一者,躺下了,维尔切克沿着夸克方向继续前进。杨振宁是量子电动力学创立的广义荷的第一者,躺下了,李政道沿着广义荷方向解读夸克禁闭色屏蔽继续前进。爱因斯坦是相对论创立的第一者,逝世了,朗道沿着电磁场和引力场理论的方向写出《场论》继续前进。中国在怒吼,但在科学只有第一没有第二的误导下,科学殿堂内外无数挑战爱因斯坦的人,只想打倒爱因斯坦,于是反复在他的原著上下功夫,并很少注意到朗道类似的第二、第三者,已经把原著不清楚的很多方面完善了。朗道 20 多年中,对研究生招收的考题类型都是公开的,但能做对的人并不多,只有十来个,说明要理解前沿科学的难度,并非易事。诺贝尔奖是对活人授奖。朗道是遭车祸后,临死之前,诺贝尔奖评委们感到他对现代科学的一些巨大贡献,应该获得诺贝尔奖,不造成死后的遗憾,才在当年授奖的。说明朗道的世界影响之大,但打倒爱因斯坦的人,很少有去关注朗道的相对论。

如果说量子电动力学以下的科学知识是"无神论",那么量子色动力学就类似"有神论",因为它不但包含味夸克、夸克味的合众逻辑,还包含海夸克、夸克海的不合众逻辑。这是对"矛盾论"分类学的提升。因为这类宇宙极问的有限和无限的并存,称为"拓扑斯"逻辑。说白了,就是可以用拓扑学的分类法给于解答。例如环面与球面的拓扑类型不同伦,球面代表要么有,要么无。环面是空心,代表有和无可以并存。而环圈的自旋,有 62 种不同的状态,球面却只有 4 种。环圈不同伦于球面,苏步青先生的《微分几何》、陈省身先生的《微分流形》、丘成桐先生的庞加莱猜想等研究都讲有,但在我国传授面不广。

钱学森的人体科学恰又遇到文革量子色动力学的断层。十年文革,筑起的这座大坝,怒吼的中国,不是冲开这座大坝,而是沿着大坝的上游汹涌。癌症虽然有多种原因,但与人的精神因素也有关。反击人体特异功能中的伪科学等类似大潮,有些"无神论"者把矛头直接指向钱学森同志,甚至胡说是什么"精神领袖"。这无疑给伤者心中埋下阴霾。钱学森同志躺在病床上,中央领导同志多次去看望他,说明国家是相信和理解钱学森同志的。

3、报兵败层子、人体科学之"仇",不信东风唤不回

钱学森先生兵败人体科学吗?何祚庥先生兵败层子科学吗?不是这个问题,人体科学和层子科学都面临 实验难题, 甚至 20 世纪的旧儒学和新儒学也类似。实验的"分开"是交换信息,实验的"叠加"是结构信 息。人体科学不是直接提取类似原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船那样大的能量。以空气动力学类比,如果原子弹、 氢弹和宇宙飞船类似飞机、火箭、气球、孔明灯升空的原理,那么人体科学就类似风筝升空的原理,这是微 不足道的。但这里有一个奇异地方是:同一风筝、同一人、同一地方、同一时段,每次把风筝放上天的情况 都不一样,有时甚至还不能放上去。这是一种概率现象。这种概率现象与量子色动力学散射实验中的喷注、 碎片反应不同一样,但总体概率仍是有规律可循的,这是比约肯等人已经证明了的。人体科学或特异功能, 排斥魔术、作假,和能用原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船所属层次的科学知识解释的外,也许还有比较"神"的现 象。例如 1984 年全国第二届气功学术讨论会上,笔者与谭爕尧、金福兴等代表亲自观看了浙江东阳气功师 李少标先生,通过运气,能使手指冒烟---水蒸气。联系马成金先生的钾钠元素引发剂与水超普通化学能反 应的汽化现象,作的量子色动化学猜想,也许人体内水循环与钾、钠离子细胞通道的观控相对界李少标人体 作用,是同一个层次的道理。现在我们把气流或空气比作"海夸克",把风筝飞起来所标志的那股或那片气 流比作"味夸克"或"部分子",那么这里的"海夸克"、夸克海,与"味夸克"、夸克味,是不同的。原子 弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船能上天,更多的是利用人工的"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的功能,而风筝 飞起来则更多的是利用自然的"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的功能。即人体科学也许探讨的更多 的是自然的"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的功能,而不是提取人体中与原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船 相比的那种微不足道的能量。即也许钱学森先生对人体科学的追求,是通过人体的这种量子色动力学现象, 达到对中医以及整个医学、生物、生理等超出量子电动力学层次的结构信息与交换信息的了解。

1)研究"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的喷注、碎片实验,需要大型强子对撞机或正负电子对撞机。层子模型排斥冷战和意识形态的因素,"兵败"也许在于从"味夸克"、夸克味到"海夸克"、夸克海之间没有一个类似"朗兰兹纲领"的语言沟通。这种类似"朗兰兹纲领"的语言沟通,不是我国没有正负电子对撞机或正负电子对撞机还没有造起来,而是缺乏对层子的"无神论"(或确定论)和量子色动力学的"有神论"(或比约肯度)的整合。所以我国的层子科学、人体科学、20世纪的新儒学,都在呼唤与时俱进的量子色动力学手册大全或大全的量子色动力学手册----21世纪新儒学。

普通化学实验的"喷注"、"碎片"有一个特点,按化学反应方程式,投入的"碎片",与产生的"碎片"、"喷注",是确定性的。赞成和质疑王洪成水变油说法的人,基本上都是这样看的。只有马成金先生以实验证明常温条件下水不变油,但是他的钾、钠引发剂与水实验是不确定性的,表现出量子色动力学实验的比约肯度特色。1994年2月28日铁道部沈阳铁路局离休干部王锡玉先生的《关于王洪成水变油问题致中央领导的一封信》中说:"那些要求发明人只有交出配方和制剂并经过所谓严格的科学检验,然后才能予以科学上的承认和专利保护的做法,这对于一般的发明是适用的,但对于像王洪成这样的超越现代科学理论认识范畴的重大发明却是不尽适用的。因为,当代世界公认的科学理论还拿不出验证这项超越时代的发明的理论指导和检测手段"。王锡玉先生说,根据全新的基础理论的分析,王洪成的这项发明已经解决了常温条件下的原子核的转变问题,它是将水分子中的氧原子的核外2个电子和核内2个正电子打掉后变成了碳的同位素C16,是一种核反应。建议由民间的中国玄子物理研究所出面,在无需王洪成交出"水变油"配方和制剂的前提下,先行组织国内科学界、企业界、和政界对"水变油"的真实性和实用性公开进行检测和确认。这是鬼话。

它虽代表了民间和官方很多不了解情况赞成的人的猜想。其实党和国家对王洪成水变油的说法非常重视,严谷良先生是一位核物理学家,曾代表高层专门负责王洪成实验。2009 年 3 月 7 日下午和晚上,作为原国家物资部燃料司副司长的严谷良高工,从北京到盐亭县玉龙农机站站长马成金工程师家,严谷良先生讲述了此事的周折。王锡玉先生所谓关键无非是发明人没有交出配方。而代表国家的一些有关部门又急于争抢到这个配方,十年来采取了许多事与愿违的做法,根本不是事实。因为即使王洪成不交出配方,现代科学仪器,如质谱分析,只要有王洪成加了引发剂的水或他的配方药剂,也能知道王洪成配方所含的化学元素。严谷良司长领导下的科学家和实验专家小组,完全掌握了王洪成配方的成份和大致的剂量,但无数次实验表现出了不确定性的类似量子色动力学实验比约肯度的特色。严谷良先生虽然是毕业于清华大学核物理学专业的高材生,但十年文革的阻断,对量子色动力学实验也不熟悉。也许直到今天,清华大学核物理学专业的一般学生,也不会做量子色动力学实验。

严谷良先生亲自对笔者讲,王洪成配方的成份与马成金的引发剂大同小异。他不需要知道马成金的引发剂配方的成份,也不愿意讨论马成金引发剂的作用原理。由于马成金家没有金属钾材料,他也没带来金属钾材料,他只是来看看马成金先生。所以,如果民间的中国人的全新的基础理论,是玄子物理研究认定的那种核反应,那么即使具有高超协调能力的只有中专学历的张廷金医师,他带走了许驭"氧核冷裂变"水变油的材料跑到了美国,已被有关大学聘任为管理学博士、管理学教授;赚到技术入股的超额利润后,正在美国加州注册创办美国 TCCAM 医科大学;也不能纯水不加油,引发剂不含碳元素,让常温下大量的水氧核冷裂变碳元素。如普通的碳元素都没有,又何来大量的碳的同位素?如说加油才能产生碳,是模版效应,这不是成了掩耳盗铃的"核反应"?但严谷良先生是承认王洪成的"水燃烧"引发剂,除开常规反应的化学能外,是可以概率性观察到额外的类似"量子色动能"的。

我们认为,这种"量子色动能",是水中氧元素核中的质子量子色动几何结构,从正立方体到六面体的涨落起伏,释放出的虚粒子色荷云扰动能量,这与钾、钠离子核中质子内的"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的色荷云扰动有关。

2) 儒学是文科,研究的是社会问题。观察"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的色荷云扰动、喷注,是大型强子对撞机的事,我国没有大型强子对撞机,但也许13亿中国人民和新中国就类似一部大型强子对撞机,上世纪60年代,也许我们只能观察到"味夸克"、夸克味,或部分子。但在21世纪,我们已能观察到全部"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味的扰动和喷注了。上世纪60年代,也许我们还处在"量子电动社会学"的认识阶段,21世纪的今天,也许我们能领略"量子色动社会学"的认识了。

这里的"喷注"、"碎片"和"海夸克"、夸克海与"味夸克"、夸克味,用"户口"、"单位"、"个体"和"籍贯"等类似来对应。上世纪 60 年代的大跃进、人民公社,农村大兵团作战,以"阶级斗争一抓就灵"作实践检验,确实也能释放出巨大的生产力,类似原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船那样大的能量。21 世纪的今天,国家没变、执政党没变、籍贯户口没变,允许成千上亿的农民自由出外打工,家乡的生产仍能推进,家庭的收入比上世纪 60 年代增加了近千倍,实践检验如量子色动力学大型强子对撞机释放出的巨大能量。上世纪

60 年代每个人所在的"户籍"、"单位"是确定的,像味夸克、价夸克一样。农民出外办事,可以流动,但要请假或要办证明,如果自发出外做小生意或打工,就是走资本主义道路,要严格打击。上世纪80 年代中叶到21 世纪初,为发展小城镇和城市建设,从乡、镇、县、市各级政府,先后都出台有政策,农村户口的人可以交不同数量的钱买乡、镇、县的城镇户口,叫做"农转非"。

2010年9月7日下午4点左右,笔者在四川绵阳市红星街居委会看到一幕类似"量子色动社会"语言不能沟通的现象:红星街居委会书记不在,一位办事员的女同志一直为难一个叫李敏的打工的年青人。事情很简单,长虹厂要集资建房,在长虹厂打工十多年的工人,没有住房的可以申请竞争有限的一点名额,就发了一张表,要申请人的爱人对方居委会盖章证明没有买过房,或单位没有优惠分过房。李敏是盐亭县麻秧乡的农民,上世纪90年代初高中毕业后到长虹厂打工,他的爱人魏红梅,是绵阳市游仙区魏城镇的农民,也在那时高中毕业后到长虹厂打工,并在长虹厂相识相爱接了婚。现在孩子已经八、九岁了,还在佬佬家上学。

李敏现不在长虹厂打工,是因中途厂里推销员要他一起到外地销售长虹彩电,但李敏的销售任务几个月都没完成,回去再当工人,需从新工人算起,而被迫离开长虹厂,到绵阳水务集团一个旧房水管改造承包老板下面打零工。李敏和魏红梅是在长虹厂外农村租房住。

那么李敏是如何跟红星街居委会发生关系的呢?上世纪90年代中叶,麻秧乡政府出文卖"农转非"户口,李敏的母亲为他买了一个麻秧乡城镇户口,后来又转成盐亭县里城镇户口。不久绵阳市政府出文,只交6000元入城费,在绵阳市里打工又有县上城镇户口的,可以转成绵阳市里的城市户口。李敏的母亲找到她读小学时的一位后来在红星街居委会居住的同学,叙述了自家的处境和绵阳市政府的政策,这位李敏母亲的同学是一位善良的人,也就同意把李敏的户口挂在自家的户口。这种情况在绵阳是很多的。

现在李敏和他母亲找到这位同学,这位同学的单位也很快盖章证明李敏没有买过房,该单位没有给李敏优惠分过房。证明拿到红星街居委会,办事员的女同志始终说,她了解李敏母亲的这位同学和单位,但她不了解李敏的情况,她怕负责。她只能在李敏母亲的这位同学的单位出具的证明上盖章,不能在长虹厂发的张表上要求居委会盖章的地方盖章。要盖章,等红星街居委会书记回来处理。因为她要李敏的单位再出证明和盖章,即要找绵阳水务集团出证明和盖章,李敏申诉,他是在绵阳水务集团下的老板的老板手下打零工,这种老板本身就是农村打工者的自愿组合,工作业务本身没有保障,所以不是正式单位,不像"味夸克、价夸克",有章可循,而像"部分子"。但中国的社会学家,只有类似普通物理、普通化学一样是普通社会学家,全国没有一个"量子色动社会学家"。

是的,这位办事员的女同志,在马恩列斯毛的著作中,找不到李敏这种有单位又没有单位,有户口又没有户口的大规模"量子色动社会"现象论述,甚至在三代领导核心的著作,也找不到李敏这种有单位又没有单位,有户口又没有户口的大规模"量子色动社会"现象论述,21世纪难道不呼唤21世纪的新儒学?据李敏说,他的孩子户口跟随他,也挂在她母亲的这位同学的户口上,但他的孩子不能在户口所在地的小学上学,因为学校还要求同时出具孩子父亲的房产证。没有房产证,要8000元的建校费,才能读书。无奈,他只能把孩子放到离绵阳近的姥姥农村上学。在马恩列斯毛和三代领导核心的著作中,都能找到亲民爱民的论述,从毛泽东时代到邓小平时代,四项基本原则都没有变,实践证明都能提取巨大的能量。毛泽东时代的"味夸克、价夸克",是党和政府的政策。邓小平时代的"海夸克、色夸克",还是党和政府的政策,但类似"朗兰兹纲领"语言沟通的21世纪新儒学,还没有建立起来,也许连居委会的办事员也有招聘打工的,他们的心灵,有难言的许多"许驭定理"。

3)湖南科技出版社 2008 年出版的英国著名科学彭罗斯的《通往实在之路》一书,类似一本"量子色动力学手册大全"。彭罗斯把自然科学的与时俱进或分类学,从古到今整理出 32 个知识阶梯----这是人类发展的科学长杆标尺。也许彭罗斯整理得还不完全,甚至有错的,但人们还可以继续完善和编写。所以,彭罗斯整理出的这 32 个知识阶梯,类似孔子写"春秋",全世界的任何国家、任何大学、任何部门或任何个人,不分老中青搞的科学新论,都可以计量他们站的位置,看清是与时俱进还是逆潮流而动。但这还不是实验的检验。

在宏观和微观之间,宏观比微观的实验,相对容易观察一些,所以纳米技术成为宏观和微观之间过渡,最吃香的技术。其次,像基因理论,在它出现之前,最吃香的技术是观察细胞。但有了基因技术,很多宏观的生物、生理现象,现在单用细胞解释的就少多了,而用基因技术解释的,更能有效地说明问题。类此,如果 21 世纪新儒学能建立起来,能走进孔子学院-----当然这里的孔子学院,也含广义的,如各种大学和研究部门,那么量子色动力学,也有如纳米技术和基因技术一样的平等意义。

例如彭罗斯的《通往实在之路》一书,最后归结的是超弦、圈量子、扭量等类似的理论。超弦是把球量子和环量子并列,这反映的是物质的一种存在。圈量子是坚持时空和物质起源的一元化。扭量是把"操作"

引进到时空和物质起源的一元化中,解决了时空和物质起源多元一体的难题,登上了科学阶梯末级。彭罗斯的整理也许是对的,但超弦、圈量子、扭量等类似的理论,属于深层次的微观,很难实验检验。

从非常大的宇宙尺度来描述,到从极端微小的粒子物理尺度来描述,全能超弦、圈量子、扭量等在描述数十亿个不同星系和每个事物时,都要能互相圆融。研究人员至今连弦理论还未能验证。目前有人提到可以在实验室检验的预测,但也许仍是事实而非。例如英国理论物理学家迈克·杜夫提出,把黑洞和量子纠缠这两种宇宙中最奇怪的现象结合在一起,为在实验室里验证弦理论提供了可能。杜夫说,虽然在技术上,它的应用前景无法预料,或者能用在与物理无关的领域,但这不仅是为了检验弦理论是科学家一直寻找的"终极理论",它所揭示的弦理论作用机制,或许会告诉我们,世上各种离奇的巧合之间,都存在某种深奥隐蔽的联系。但众所周知,量子纠缠涉及量子自旋,目前量子自旋连是球量子还是环量子基本都没有统一,更不要说对环量子自旋朗兰兹纲领语言的旋束态三旋算法及量子计算的应用。

又如,美国物理学家格林斯丁教授的弦理论测试设定的范围,基于弦理论范本中包括的罗伦兹不变性、解析性和幺正性等三个数学猜想。格林斯丁说:"如果测试没有找到弦理论预测的 W 玻色子散射情况,那就证明弦理论重要的数学猜想之一是错的。换一句话说就是,证明弦理论是不存在的。"但有人说,假如范围满足,他将仍然无法确知弦理论是正确的。只是假如不在范围之内,正如他所理解的,弦理论可能是错的,或至少弦理论必须以一种高非平凡方式来重新改造。这不等于格林斯丁在白说。况且,测试预测的 W 玻色子散射,也还是需要大型强子对撞机一类的设备。反对者反驳弦理论的,正是没有创造出能用实验方法验证的预测,而无法得到证实,或者根本就是错误的。况且,现在仍然没有任何粒子加速器,能够达到检测弦理论所需的高能。由于技术上的限制,直到今日弦理论的测试仍难以进行。

当然,由于人们没有完全理解弦理论,因此不能排除基于弦的各种可能模式。而大多数弦理论模式,都是基于确定的数学猜想,人们所需要说明的东西,就是此类弦理论有一些明确的预测,可以检测到。实际量子色动力学的实验,它一些明确的预测,可以检测到的,这就确立了它在从原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船等可行技术,到超弦、圈量子、扭量等不可行技术之间,有如纳米技术和基因技术一样平等意义的地位。例如,量子色动力学实验的碎片、喷注研究,可以肯定地说,只利用原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船等涉及的量子电动力学层次以下的知识,坐在屋里不要仪器提供的数据,没有公认的通用数学计算方法,能预报地震、雷电发生的准确地点、级别和时间,永远是胡说。地面的板块,天上的云层,可以看成量子色动力学中广义的碎片、喷注元素。地质板块之间发生地震,地面的地块与天上的云层之间发生雷电,现用原子弹、氢弹和宇宙飞船等涉及的量子电动力学层次以下的知识解释,这类似生物、生理现象用细胞学说解释一样。用量子色动力学的碎片、喷注研究所得的知识,再利用类似原理的仪器提供的数据和公认的通用数学计算方法,人类能预报任何地震、雷电发生的准确地点、级别和时间,就类似宏观的生物、生理现象,用基因技术解释一样的会有效。

4) 2010 年 8 月 19 日,38 岁的法籍越南裔人吴宝珠,获得有"数学界诺贝尔奖"之称的菲尔茨奖传来,使我们又振奋又悲痛。吴宝珠是因成功证明难度极高的朗兰兹纲领引理的"基本引理"而获奖的,这一成果使全世界的数学家终于可以松一口气,所以早还被美国《时代》杂志评为2009 年十大科学发现。1979 年,加拿大裔美国数学家罗伯特·朗兰兹提出了一个大胆的革命性构想,将数学中的两大分支---数论和群论----联系起来,通过一系列的推测和分析,这一理论发现了与涉及整数的公式有关的不可思议的对称性,并最终提出了所谓的"朗兰兹纲领"。而量子色动力学联系朗兰兹纲领,是把宏观和微观两大分支联系起来,通过一系列的推测和分析环量子,应用自旋语言的旋束态三旋算法及量子计算。

今年是彭罗斯 80 华诞,据沈致远先生及 2010 年 3 月 13 日《新科学家》透露,弦论的创立者威滕,最近已采用彭罗斯的扭量理论创造,试图将弦论的 10 维空间加 1 维时间的 11 维时空,减为较易对付的 4 维。三旋理论的线旋,就能形象解读彭罗斯的扭量图像操作。

2010 年 8 月底,新疆气象研究所原所长、著名科学家张学文先生为韩锋教授送行。韩峰教授是新疆师范学院物理教授,退休后被河池学院聘为物理系主任,据说是著名物理学家何祚庥院士的学生。在宴席间,两人讨论起三旋理论,张学文先生认为三旋理论解决了宏观和微观两大分支联系的"语言"。韩锋教授极力反对,认为三旋是虚拟的宏观圈态自旋描述,不能引进到微观领域。吴新忠博士谈到要尊重何祚庥院士时,也提到类似韩峰教授一样的观点。再从董仁威先生传何祚庥先生说三旋理论是伪科学,到科学无神论网站和三思科学网站等发表《废除"伪科学"提法网络签名者简介》,嘲笑"朗兰兹纲领",定性三旋理论是伪科学,看来在中国科学殿堂部分被控制的理论物理界已形成统一的口径。

其实,说三旋理论是"伪科学",是别人的自由,是别人的认识。我们不会感到为难。但三旋理论是不是"伪科学",任何神志清醒的人,不难识别。因为三旋从来没有学过层子去瞎编自创太极子、玄子,也没有学金凤汉去瞎编小管、小体之类,而是设想圈体可软的话,扭转能作线旋、面旋、体旋,就有三种自旋的

20

编码。这是一种可感、可模拟的图像和描述的自旋语言,类似 21 世纪的新以太论,例如,维尔切克说,量子维度上的运动所带来的变化不是位移,即这里没有距离的概念,而它是自旋的变化。这种"超速度平移",将给定内在自旋的粒子变成不同的粒子。那么三旋是如何进入这种 21 世纪新以太论的呢?这是对自旋作语境分析并用对称概念,对自旋、自转、转动作语义学的定义:

- (1) 自旋:在转轴或转点两边存在同时对称的动点,且轨迹是重叠的圆圈并能同时组织起旋转面的旋转。如地球的自转和地球的磁场北极出南极进的磁力线转动。
- (2) 自转:在转轴或转点的两边可以有或没有同时对称的动点,但其轨迹都不是重叠的圆圈也不能同时组织起旋转面的旋转。如转轴偏离沿垂线的地陀螺或廻转仪,一端或中点不动,另一端或两端作圆圈运动的进动,以及吊着的物体一端不动,另一端连同整体作圆锥面转动。
- (3)转动:可以有或没有转轴或转点,没有同时存在对称的动点,也不能同时组织起旋转面,但动点轨迹是封闭的曲线的旋转。如地球绕太阳作公转运动。

粒子自旋不能理解为它环绕某一本征轴的旋转运动,只能说自旋粒子的表现与陀螺相似。因为宏观世界的物体,例如陀螺或汽车,不具有自旋的性质。虽然这些物体也可以环绕本征轴旋转,但是这种旋转不是它们的必不可少的性质,特别是,我们能够加强它们的旋转运动,也能停止它们的旋转运动,而基本粒子的自旋,既不能加强,也不可以减弱。那么如果提出基本粒子的结构不是通常认为的是球量子而是环量子的图像假论,就此如果仍然站在球量子的观点,把它设想成陀螺状。它只有一类旋转的两种运动。我们设为 A、a。大写 A 代表左旋,小写 a 代表右旋。但站在环量子的观点,类似圈态的客体我们定义为类圈体,我们把它设想成轮胎状,那么类圈体应存在三类自旋,现给予定义:

- (1) 面旋: 指类圈体绕垂直于圈面中心的轴线作旋转。如车轮绕轴的旋转。
- (2) 体旋: 指类圈体绕圈面内的轴线作旋转。如拨浪鼓绕手柄的旋转。
- (3)线旋:指类圈体绕圈体内中心圈线作旋转。如地球磁场北极出南极进的磁力线转动。线旋一般不常见,如固体的表面肉眼不能看见分子、原子、电子等微轻粒子的运动。其次,线旋还要分平凡线旋和不平凡线旋。不平凡线旋是指绕线旋轴圈至少存在一个环绕数的涡线旋转,如墨比乌斯体或墨比乌斯带形状。同时不平凡线旋还要分左斜、右斜。因此不平凡线旋和平凡线旋又统称不分明自旋。反之,面旋和体旋称为分明自旋。如果作为一种圈态编码练习,设面旋、体旋、平凡线旋、不平凡线旋它们为 A、a,B、b 和 G、g、E、e、H、h。其中大写代表左旋,小写代表右旋。现在我们来看一个圈态自旋密码具有多少不同结合状态?单动态——个圈子只作一种自旋的动作,是 10 种。双动态——个圈子同时作两种自旋动作,但要排除两种动作左旋和右旋是同一类型的情况,是 28 种。三动态——个圈子同时作三种自旋动作,但要排除其中两种动作是同一类型的情况,是 24 种。一个圈子同时作四种自旋动作,其中必有两种动作左旋和右旋是属于同一类型,这是被作为"禁止"的情况。所以我们也把三种动态叫做多动态。环量子的自旋是共计 62 种,比球量子的自旋的 2 种多 60 种。

如果何祚庥先生及其同事和学生把这认为是"伪科学",那么我们中国也是一个"伪科学"大国。因为中国大、中、专的理科教科书,大多数都是按宏观可感、可模拟的图像和描述的知识来教大家的。如果偏要把这种可感、可模拟的科学"无神论",打成"伪科学",那么这类科学无神论者实质是一批"有神论"者,因为他们在把自己打扮成为"神",希望控制中国的科学。钱学森之问是"关于中国教育事业发展的一道艰深命题",由此引发的沉重思考牵动着上至国家领导人下至普通百姓每一个关心中国发展的人。大师为什么也不能培养不出大师?钱学森先生已经明确说了:"我因不是搞理论物理的,中国科学院理论物理研究所副所长何祚庥同志是此道行家,又热心于自然辩证法的研究"。钱学森同志把希望寄托在何祚庥同志身上,希望这位50年间驰骋中国理论物理学界的泰斗,带动培养出无数的大师。那么何祚庥先生的水平到底怎样呢?

何祚庥先生我们没有具体接触,他的学生韩锋教授我们打过交道。2002 年有人把《三旋理论初探》一书送给在河池学院的韩锋教授看。韩教授看后提出了尖锐批评。当然批评,我们是非常欢迎的。但啼笑皆非的是,韩教授把墨比乌斯带和墨比乌斯体不能作联系。他说世上只有墨比乌斯带,没有墨比乌斯体。三旋理论中类圈体作非平凡线旋,是墨比乌斯体,所以是荒唐的。是的,众所周知的是墨比乌斯带,中国的书中很少介绍墨比乌斯体。但既然墨比乌斯带存在,如果把3条、4条等同样的纸带,做成三角形、正方形等口型的管子,那么墨比乌斯体是指把三角形、正方形等口型管子两端扭转后的对接。这种墨比乌斯体类似把墨比乌斯带看成是压扁后的水管扭转一个面的对接,再充气吹胀,就可以近似再现墨比乌斯体。这是从宏观到宏观的扩张,这一点何祚庥先生的学生韩锋教授都难以理解,那么他们怎么能把宏观知识的数学扩张到微观领域里去呢?所以我们中国即使出了如华罗庚、陈省身、苏步青、丘成桐等很多的国际著名的数学大师,也是白

搭。他们的微分几何、微分流形、堆垒数论、卡一丘空间推证等书籍摆在图书馆里,也是白摆,中国怎能出大师呢?

那么何祚庥先生的自然辩证法研究的水平又怎样呢?1965年《红旗》杂志发表坂田昌一的《新基本粒子观对话》,何祚庥先生夫妇参与了该文后面《注释》的写作。其中特别突出的是斗争哲学。例如大批玻尔的互补原理,是在国际学术界散布唯心主义、形式主义的论断等。也许有人说,他们是受主席斗争哲学的引导。但反过来说,他们何尝不也是把斗争哲学引导给主席。张学文先生是北大走过的高材生,但他为什么又没有沿着韩教授、何教授等指导的道路前行呢?实际张学文先生出版的《组成论》专著,是以"个"研究解读"熵"运用于系统科学、复杂性研究、信息论和热力学等领域,取得很高成就的科学家。例如把量子力学的空间破裂模式联系张学文先生的球量子组成论的"快刀斩乱麻"复杂程度分布研究,"快刀斩乱麻"的随机分割也如同喷雾器把药水变成很多个小滴的喷雾一样,其次也如同把杯子打碎、把煤挖出来要对物体施加能量一样,其后果还是使物体增加很多新的断面。这里药水变成雾滴,也是施加的能量形成了雾滴的表面积,而表面积的增加也就对应表面自由能的增加;计算每一次喷雾的雾滴的表面积的总和,应当与做功的总能量多少成正比例。这与黑洞的表面对应黑洞的熵相似。但球量子组成论即使反对物质无限可分,其思维仍是球面思维。因为球量子组成论的局限性,是阿伏伽德罗数的"个"的决定论,造出的"无神"事实。如果最基本的东西可分,是球量子及它的场,那么从图像上说,自旋是有体积的。但如果最基本的东西可分,是环量子及它的场,那么从图像上说,环量子的自旋可分立为三种自旋——体旋、面旋、线旋,线旋带动它的场,这是没有体积的。

这种环量子点"以太"的自旋堆全、发散,不能用阿伏伽德罗数的"个"的"无神"论描述,而类似"有神论"。而三旋理论又退去这种"神",是因为新中国的培养教育,从 1959 年到 1974 年坚持的把弦圈耦合成链条,再看成一条线;到 1974 年此理论第一次公开了三旋规范动力符号表及其与夸克的对应;再到 2002 年《三旋理论初探》一书出版,实际解决了弦理论、宇宙弦理论的三大难题:A、弦理论解决了物质族分 3 代与卡一丘空间 3 孔族的对应,但仍有多孔选择的难题。B、弦理论解决了多基本粒子与多卡一丘空间形状变换的对应,但仍有多种形状选择的难题。C、弦理论解决具体的基本粒子的卡一丘空间图形虽有多种数学手段,但仍遇到数学物理原理的选择难题。所以 21 世纪新儒学量子色动力学中弦圈的发明权,也应属于中国人! 21 世纪新儒学走进孔子学院,不仅能带文。也能带理。

#### 参考文献

- [1][美]查尔斯•塞费,解码宇宙,上海科技教育出版社,2010年4月;
- [2]叶眺新, 隐秩序和全息论, 自然信息, 1985年第3期;
- [3][英]罗杰·彭罗斯,通往实在之路,湖南科学技术出版社,王文浩译,2008年6月;
- [4][美]弗兰克·维尔切克,存在之轻,湖南科学技术出版社,王文浩译,2010年4月;
- [5]王德奎,三旋理论初探,四川科学技术出版社,2002年5月;
- [6]孔少峰、王德奎,求衡论---庞加莱猜想应用,四川科学技术出版社,2007年9月:
- [7]王德奎,解读《时间简史》,天津古籍出版社,2003年9月;
- [8]薛晓舟,量子真空物理导引,科学出版社,2005年8月;
- [9][美]保罗·哈尔彭,伟大的超越,湖南科技出版社,刘政译,2008年4月;
- [10][美]L·斯莫林,物理学的困惑,湖南科技出版社,李泳译,2008年4月:
- [11][美]斯蒂芬·韦伯,看不见的世界,湖南科学技术出版社,胡俊伟译,2007年12月:
- [12]刘月生、王德奎等,"信息范型与观控相对界"研究专集,河池学院学报 2008 年增刊第一期,2008 年 5月;
- [13][英]安德鲁·华生,量子夸克,湖南科技出版社,刘健等译,2008年4月;
- [14] 叶眺新,中国气功思维学,延边大学出版社,1990年5月。

9/13/2010

### 地震起因和防治

孙纯武

江苏省扬州三力电器集团,中国江苏省扬州市西湖镇59号电话0514-82822538邮编225008

电子信箱: yzscw@163.com 博客http://yzscw.blog.163.com

摘要:地球的前身,就是太阳将氢聚合成氦颗粒物质后,一步步在向心力作用下,将那些坠落在日核周围各种物质就像滚雪球似地,将质量又聚合复制成一个个米粒状和球形黑子。当黑子也就是地球脱离母体后到一定距离,前端面上部就像违章操作热处理,那些由氦颗粒组合成的球表面,突然受冷收缩降温变硬发脆,将各种颗粒物质也就是一块块板块粘连处,发生爆裂,引起球面向一边一块块地滑动突出下垂加速运动。使这面特别赤道以下鼓出度大。另一面夜晚在斜面上的板块,又逐步随着向上被向心运动的拉力作向内冷收缩弯曲,就像形成了似杠杆力臂。球的物体上下两端,也就是后来称南北极板块,自身没有位移运动,由别的板块推动状态,就像形成了似杠杆支点。地核每被离心力推挤向这个杠杆力臂上一端,就被复制出更多做功能量。加快了当初大约有一千多个氦颗粒聚合成的球外壳,一个个有规律自组织地冷却爆裂,或由于球体两边运动力不平衡将粘裢处撕裂开,最终形成一块块活动板块和机械自转创造了条件。

[孙纯武. 地震起因和防治. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):23-31]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

关键词: 地震起因防治 功过

二十多年前,我根据地震理论,估计台湾十年后有大地震,搞地震防治能立竿见影,当时无法将信寄台湾气象厅, 我把内部资料和严禁出境海关封条一起转寄中国科学院地球物理研究所, 二十多年后终于发生大地震。现将以前信件修改后,用小说对话形式发表在个人网站上的文章,供专家学者对地震防治研究作学术交流。

谈到地震防治,首先用新理论统一场论来从地球起源、人类起源说起才能弄清问题,因为地震有自发 地震和因果地震两种性质区别。在此作简单描述。

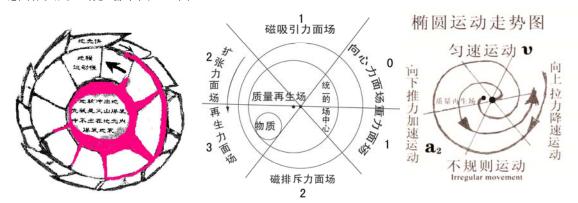
从伟大宇宙母亲大分娩文章中,地球的前身,就是太阳将氢聚合成氦颗粒物质后,一步步在向心力作用下,将那些坠落在日核周围各种物质就像滚雪球似地,将质量又聚合复制成一个个米粒状和球形黑子。当黑子也就是地球脱离母体后到一定距离,前端面上部就像违章操作热处理,那些由氦颗粒组合成的球表面,突然受冷收缩降温变硬发脆,将各种颗粒物质也就是一块块板块粘连处,发生爆裂,引起球面向一边一块块地滑动突出下垂加速运动。使这面特别赤道以下鼓出度大。另一面夜晚在斜面上的板块,又逐步随着向上被向心运动的拉力作向内冷收缩弯曲,就像形成了似杠杆力臂。球的物体上下两端,也就是后来称南北极板块,自身没有位移运动,由别的板块推动状态,就像形成了似杠杆支点。地核每被离心力推挤向这个杠杆力臂上一端,就被复制出更多做功能量。加快了当初大约有一千多个氦颗粒聚合成的球外壳,一个个有规律自组织地冷却爆裂,或由于球体两边运动力不平衡将粘裢处撕裂开,最终形成一块块活动板块和机械自转创造了条件。

以后地核高温高压的液体, 也随着板块运动速度加快,不在沿消耗能量少的椭圆运动,发展成向消耗能量多的圆周运动。因此 自旋就被摩擦力引力等统一了运动强度,发生收缩向中心运动。

另一方面地核铁的质量经离心力、向心力推挤摩擦不断加工,使它在作螺旋往复式的上下旋转中,旋转快时向北极提供了带有磁体铁物质元素。旋转慢时向南极地区提供了磁体铁物质元素,不断地积累使南北极地区产生了磁场;另一方面,特别地壳赤道周围斜面上一块块板块,由于处于不同质量的再生场环境内,复制出能量有多少不同。 如运动在扩张力面场一边一个个活动板块,是从上向下加速运动的先后,便圆球鼓出度特别下午三至四时高大。另一面夜晚,在重力面场、向心力面场上运动的一个个活动板块等,随着向上运动受向心拉力影响,又依次作向心收缩弯曲做降速运动,这种地壳周围板块有规律地左右依次运动于南北极磁场上,就拉断了由地核旋转运动的磁感应线,就从机械能转换成电流自转。也就是由如太极子电子等速度快慢和分布的数量多少,铺设了一条所谓磁场高速公路通道,产生出质量大小的电流等来发展。

当然,原子内两个物体互相磨擦时, 那个物体的原子核束缚电子本领弱,它的一些电子就会转移到另一个物体上;失去电子的物体因缺少电子而带正电, 得到了电子的物体因为有了多余电子而带等量的负电. 也就是电子作向心力,光子质子作离心力也是一个方面发生了自旋。

因此,在地球初期温度高的情况下,就发生了造山运动。地核每被离心力推挤进板块与板块交界活动 缝面张大处(请参看下图左上面),



发生了膨胀,而当自转运动到夜间时,随着板块不断向上运动速度的降慢,摩擦发热热能也在减少。因此,向心力和冷收缩又将板块与板之间气和原子内气以及一部分地核液体夹住,迫使板块交界活动缝一端上地面,被不断收缩挤压的气体或液体力顶了凸起,突出部分地面形成了山脉。山脉地面冷却快,而山脚下内冷却慢。特别当地面板块再运动到扩张力面场时,也就是夜间两时后,由于山脉和根部受力不同。同时朝太阳一面有突出下垂加速度惯性推力的势能帮助,使山峦根部地面被推拉成低凹,形成河流状或丘陵地面及地裂缝等地貌。

这种原始地球板块活动缝周围被不断推挤扭拉挤压顶了凸起,又不断在运动中被拉伸,并发生球面一块块被撕裂,直至形成一块块小活动板块,能适应自组织产生不匀速自转的一切剧烈运动,变动称第一造山运动时期,随着地球温度下降平衡也相应减弱了。

约十万年后,地球已形成了山区、丘陵、平地、低凹、地裂缝等不规则地形地貌。以及这些地壳、地幔板块在球面上还有三种运动形式:一、白天朝太阳一面板块一端从上向下依次突出、下垂加速运动,夜间板块一端,又依次向心收缩弯曲地降速活动;二、由于每块板块自身形状和所处的地理环境不同,在不规则球面上受离心力作用作自转似地位移运动(有顺时针和逆时针位移运动);三、在那漫长的历史岁月中,由于地球周围被不同的作用力构成了椭圆球,因此各经纬度线上离心力有所不同,赤道的离心力比南北极大,南北极板块的前端不断受离心力的牵引、推挤,又作合久必分、分久必合向南北极的周期位移运动,为今后形成火山、地震创造了条件,也为创造新物质具备了不规则合力条件。

如若干年后,随着地球自转速度降慢到一定极限时,地球内和空气对流层的原子内,不规则合力终于同太阳能源进行了合成达到统一进化,使原子在受两种不同作用力下,气旋在一定旋转推挤摩擦速度中产生了水分子,及后来又在太空湍流中产生了雨核。在核的空穴中心质量再生场中水分子,被离心力复制出更多酸雾及后来的雨水,降落在地球上,地球环境就起化学反应,产生了第二个飞跃。一些低凹地区,被积水形成河或河流,一些地面在酸水、风和光照等等力的作用下,地质得到部分改善变为如土壤。这些高低不平的地面和越来越多的水面,为地面环境创造了一些原始物质,如含有硫化铁的岩石空腔洞中聚集的氢气、氧气,就像形成人类意识似地,顺沿有规则、有方向性地作向心椭圆运动。它们受到日月的精华、天地之甘露的气体不断熏陶,最终相互发生了作用,产生了第三个飞跃。不同质的合力,却产生了不同质的结果,首先在不同气旋环流中,被进化成高级球体蛋卵,产生出各种原始草木种子,那些原始草木在生存中,不断地受到自然界各种不规则合力运动加工合成,如风和水的流动等,又接受顺自然选择,和在自身运动吐呐出的氧气等气体及物质,同自然界之气和物质逐步合成,又进化出一些有展伸能力或新的合成能力的物种及杂种。例如大地先产生了草木,阴暗潮湿产生了青苔等植物,以后又向高级合成进化, 山峦和海底首先产生了各种动物,又如北极严寒进化出北极熊,热带产生了雨林,温湿带产生了熊猫,江河产生了鱼虾等等。

可是,那些大型动物,特别是恐龙,不去创造生产资料和物质,而是靠强者生存的法则,去滥吃滥杀海洋内一切生物。由于大量捕杀,使海洋生物供不应求。这些恐龙又进化到陆地去捕杀无辜生物,一只大恐龙一天能吃几只最凶狠的老虎,生物界哪有这么快的繁殖能力,所以也遭到了天愤,大批恐龙在饿死。当然自然界一切生物,一个个为了生存,都在寻找消灭恐龙的对策,形成了宇宙间一股高级不规则合力怨气、恕气

及志气在运动。这股似毒气又加大了原有气旋运动的能量和物质合成,使恐龙体内细胞旋转加快,摩擦发热生电就增多。长期就会进化出雄性多、雌性少的不平衡状态自然灭绝。短期内它们体内质量大大提高,细胞内有用高脂肪物质不断被高温毁掉。因此,基因得不到有益质量复制,就生各种病如像癌病的瘟病等加快了恐龙灭亡。并且那些吃剩的尸骨或排泄物,所存留智慧意识数据等等物质,污染了山峦和海底环境后,为促进创造更高级新事物、新物种不断产生,提供了合成和进化的条件。我们人类就是在这多种高级不规则交叉合力运动的山峦、海底中,同万物一样,受自然环境之力和天时作用应运而生高级生物,来平衡调节自然界力量。这种山峦周围境地与海底,它的对流与环流、明与暗、冷与热、干与湿、环境污染与不污染以及各种动物、植物新陈代谢的相互作用较多、较大,特别是地球内部的先天原始物质。地核混合气体流中的有机物质、热能从山脚下板块活动缝内,就像倒竖的龙卷风旋柱,源源不断,无规则地向外辐射,促使岩石空腔中聚集氢气、氧气、一氧化碳及其它生命体起源所需要的各种物质和能量,最终又在不规则合力运动同地面向心椭圆运动气旋里形成统一,进化出是更高级的智慧生物——直立行走的人种。

虽然他们聪明,劳动出更多的生物和植物,创造改变生存环境,去调节平衡自然界。由于自然科学理论落后,没有将物体存进系统内复制出更多能量,又由于有永不满足离心力的贪婪心,变相重蹈恐龙滥采滥用滥浪费自然界物质之路。例如大量开采各种矿产资源,造出了飞机、火车、汽车、轮船等等作用力机械,使在它们周围的宇宙万物中原子内,各种污烟障气的向心力能量加大,原子内摩擦发热生电也就加大,使气候反常、气候变暖、各种自然灾害增多等等。特别各个国家军备竞赛加剧,地下大型爆破加大,又产生和加大了各种气体运动和合成,也破坏了地壳板块运动规律,诱发地震,甚至也干扰破坏了地球内人类生命财产安全,受到报复,发生不该发生的矿难和因果地震。下面为了解说清楚些,我用导游对话式来解剖地震各问题。

- "老板,你等一下,让我再仔细看看。好像走着走着发现路面越来越宽了,而且有一边还在突出下垂。"
- "不错,我也有这个感觉,自从夜间两时后,地壳、地幔板块一端都朝太阳方向做突出下垂加速运动,板块与板块内活动缝口张大。"
- "果真是这样,两个板块交界处是地震带,由于地幔板块面经常受地壳板块位移,推挤摩擦发热积蓄增温,也受地核被离心力运动时,对地幔推挤摩擦发热,使一些岩石已转化成铁质熔浆了,并在不断增气压力,原子承受不了这个力就容易发生地震。"
  - "那好呀,'不识地震真面目,只缘身在地壳外',不走了,这就叫呆子娶老婆,坐守。"
- "这个地方不是南极不能坐。在那倒霉的南极,是极少产生地震。因为南极冰天雪地就像冰柜,将地壳内进行了降温。此外,南极周围离心力极小,虽经长时期地壳在地幔板块上位移推挤摩擦发热发光的积蓄,能使地幔内有一小部分的熔浆体被压送进莫霍洛维奇间断面内,也就是南极小板块活动缝内,但它无回天之力,只能在南极地壳内部地区,进行合成和进化或分化时将一个个原子进化出煤碳、石油及一次次爆发出极光之类气体等。并且南极和北极板块都没有运动量,最适合生活在地核空穴中的地球内人类居住、造飞碟等。现在我们俩不但在活动缝空穴中,而且是在赤道附近地区,受到两种不同作用力,推挤摩擦发热产生出的水分子就多。和地核的能量进入活动缝空穴中更厉害。

老板快看,地核在450万个大气压力和4000度高温,以及在自转离心力作用下,那些熔浆就像炼钢炉打开了似地,夜两点钟后,顺沿板块突出下垂张开的活动缝像蛇形奔流着,穿过了古登堡面进入了软流圈,又穿过了地幔b层、P层,那些榴辉岩石层的温差越来越加大,因此那些液体的奔流越来越慢。同时,当自转使板块逐渐转移到夜间时,一块块板块也在依次向内收缩弯曲做降速运动,这股逃逸出来的熔浆体正好在这里安营扎寨,屯积能源。"

- "是呀,如果不是板块不断向内收缩这股降速力,经过一个白天的加速奋斗,那些熔浆肯定突破地壳一 道道防线,逃逸出地壳形成火山爆发。""可能也不是这一个原因,其它如地壳太坚硬,地壳地幔地形太复杂,地壳内被两种作用力摩擦出的温度还太低等,无法使熔浆产生穿透地壳的能量。"
- "你看那些被囚固在莫霍诺维奇间断面内的高温高压熔浆和气体,在板块不断往内收缩的挤压下,就像 液压千斤顶似地将地壳板块一端轻轻地顶起,也使一个个原子发生臌胀,地面已鼓得像个小山包似地。"
- "不错,这些无塑性的岩石圈肯定承受不了这个不断加压的极限,岩石圈就会发生爆裂。你看有什么方法制止它不再加压扩充,这样就不会发生火山或地震了。

对地震防治办法是有,而且地震防治比地震预防、预报更有效果。好比谁人知道某天某时生阑尾炎病,但我们用外科手术将它提前开刀切除,就可免除后患一样。并且还能搞出许多其它经济效益名堂来:

一、我们要在地震带活动缝(但最好远离原地震如唐山震中心约五十公里外处,这样可以节约成本)、原大断谷处、原中国地震带分布地势图上地区、环形山脉周围、高大山川脚下靠河流边,面朝东地段、长江沿线或在地震带上特别是人口密集的大中型城市等地段,均应在长二百公里,宽一百公里的地面上,每50公

里(在人口密集居住的地震带地区可适度密些),用石油钻机打直径五十公分,深一千米以上防震井,常年可试用罗平亚教授发明的深井高温聚合物处理剂,和屏蔽式暂堵技术化学粘合剂,或化学制冷剂,向内投放。这种地核高温未进入莫霍诺维奇间断面,向板块活动缝内不断投放粘合剂使它化学反应处理降温降压,并使地幔内活动缝被这粘合剂封住活动缝口,进行可塑性粘接,不许被复制出来的高温高压熔浆进入地壳低温地区,这样就不容易引起原子内连琐核聚变反应,减少地震发生。即使有少量进入,震级不会大。现在就是发生了,也照样可以在震中周围 150 公里外,(就像扑灭森林大火砍伐树木为隔火墙一样)顺沿地裂缝或活动缝内深处多施放粘合剂或化学制冷剂。长时间内,万有引力也会将粘合剂或化学制冷剂,吸入地幔板块活动缝内,内部高温会使它可塑性粘合,或用大液压泵将化学粘合剂压入板块活动缝内,最好越深越好,多投放粘合剂或化学制冷剂,等隔温材料降温降压,阻止那些高温液熔浆体向四周蔓延或迫使熔浆少进入,甚至不进入,以便改善地壳内环境,少发生余震和强震。

也可大量向防震井内投放耐高温牛油,或硬脂酸等润滑降温降压材料,来降低或消除活动板块接触面,受三种不同运动推挤摩擦发热的能量,这样地壳与地幔板块活动面,摩擦发热转化为铁质熔浆的能量就大大降低了,或水分子聚合后复制出的地下水也大大减少。就可使地壳内降温和原子内降温降压,就不能发生地震或少发生地震。这种提前进行可塑性粘合封闭处理或润滑处理降温降压,有利于改善地壳内运动环境的质量,延长地球寿命。同时还可以大大降低地震能的破坏和降低气候增暖,及改善一些地区少发生特大旱后,再发生特大涝机会。(其实火山和地震爆发的能量不是主要来源于地核,地核在中心可能受几十亿年降温,已成可塑体或固体态,它不能直接形成和喷射火山物质的能力。)

二、在板块活动缝两边约长二百公里、宽一百公里内地段,也就是地震带区域,每 50 公里用钻探机钻打一口深一公里、直经一米的深井,用一公厘米厚钢板圈成铁管,并在铁管周围每平方分米处打一厘米直经的孔,将铁管一节节套连接到地面上(如 200 米就是岩石层,如为了节约成本在 200 米内连接)。为了提高防震能力,便于好打,用钻探机也可再向下钻 500 米,口径可改为二十公分,这一部分就不一定需要用铁管连接了。以后在铁管上边加铁盖,按装水泵按装气压表。平时大量利用地下水和地下热能,当地核强大的高温高压进入地壳,它会自动排爆和预报地震,而且还将地壳板块合久必分、分久必合的周期位移运动的因果地震,所储存的推挤扭拉混合能量,储存进原子内的高温高压,通过此透气孔一起释放掉,减小因果地震能的破坏程度,或能引导到地壳外排泄就不会发生 7 级以上强震。并且如打到地热点上时,也可在地面上建温泉浴室、地热发电站等,如打在泉眼上,就可经营矿泉水综合开发利用。或将地下水引导到地面进行水循环冷却来降温降压。

三、抽真空法,将真空机装入地壳内,不断地将地壳内也就是原子内不断增高的高温高压排掉,从而降 低地震能的破坏和减少地震机会。

四、降温法,不断大量向地壳深处投放冷气降温,就可减少高温高压同地下水合成反应下变成"混合烃,来激破岩石内原子的爆裂撞击地壳引起的地震,请参看大科学家王德奎**揭秘"水变烃"或"水变油"秘密文章就知奥秘了**。

也可大量利用空气中热能和地下热能,海洋热能,及大片植树造林,来减少地震机会和降低震级及降低气候变暖。

其次,不要在地震带上搞大建筑群建设和水库,否则地面要做防水漏水措施。不要在地震危险时搞大爆破作业,特别地下核武器。

以上这些可以防震治震,但我们在无任何防治条件的情况下,只好坐以待毙看地震能演戏了。老板你看见没有,这股板块位移运动不断推挤扭拉向心力向内挤压,和地核被离心力向外推挤摩擦出高温高压熔浆体,终于使一个个原子不断臌胀岩石圈发生了变形,一股强大的混合气体流就像电源导线发生了短路一样,使整个板块活动缝空穴中被连琐聚变闪电照得通明。这种闪电不断显现,又使那些周围没有引爆的原子内气体和小分子物质加大了膨胀和无序运动,由于地壳内结构和环境复杂,穿出地壳外,形成了千姿百态,它就像《唐山地震之迷》一书中所说那样,震前5—6小时,天空开始出现少量、零星而分散的奇异闪光——蓝色闪光,这蓝光在黑暗中时隐时现,恍恍惚惚地持续二十分钟,泛泛发光区呈现出破晓时的朦胧景象,极震区出现早亮度大,泛泛发光区开始向外扩散,具有多色的、变幻的(红、蓝、紫、白色等)球状光在外围陆续出现。

震前二至三小时,极强的红光不时在天空闪烁,并开始呈现红黄相间的游荡光带。

震前一小时左右,多处出现红色、紫色、粉红色的涤状光柱,彩蛇似的条带和似火龙般的光带闪闪发光,逝而复生,即闪即逝的、五颜六色的、形态各异的光彩,在黑暗夜空的背景上,犹如火龙当空飞舞,彩带在空中荡漾!

地震爆发前一至十分钟,在震区地光开始同步出现,勾画出一幅有声有色的震前景观,其频度、强度急

剧增强。发震断层附近,忽然天空亮如白昼,连对面楼房的墙缝都清晰可见。五彩缤纷、千姿百态的光象转换断续映现在冀东的夜空,兰变红,红变白······

震前一分多钟, 距震中二十五公里的东北方夜空中像雷电似地辐射出三道刺眼的光束, 瞬间消逝, 随即三股蘑菇状烟雾喷吐在夜幕上。

地震即刻来临,市内小山区天空发红,天昏地暗,像暴风雨来临前的一股大风从东北方向刮来,听"风声"很大,但吹到身上感觉并不大,"风声"过后,忽然亮得厉害,脚下的东西看得一清二楚,像耀眼的闪电一样,但比闪电持续时间长,约有七、八秒钟时间,颜色为白光略带红彩,亮度消逝后显得特别漆黑。并且相续出现了这种地声和地光现象大量发生在震中区,少数在外围,地声出现在东、西方向断裂带附近为多,而地光则在东、南、西居多,两者既相伴又相离,交叉出现。

你听由于距离声源的远近不同和方向差异,也因为声音传播介质性质不一,并且由于从地裂缝直冲天空,以及人们听觉反应各异,加上描述比喻上的局限等因素,造成了不同的多种多样的形象表达。

忽闻远处有声如雷,又似夹杂狂风骤雨,一种古怪的风,一直听'风声'而不见树梢摇动——远远而来,从天上到地下,从地下又回转到天上,一股强大的立体声像飓风似的吼叫着,铺天盖地,犹如千军万马奔驰而来,又似千万只猛虎下山疯狂嘶叫。如果你站在东部地区,就好像听到,犹如一列火车轰轰隆隆从地下奔驰而来;对西部地区人来说,地声最强烈时宛如狂风呼啸;对北部山区的人来说,地声像是开山采石放连珠炮的声音;对南部平原人来说,地声好似从唐山方向开来一队队压路机的轰鸣声;市区,巨大的、沉闷的立体声响连成一片,令人惊诧而难以忍受并产生一种莫名的恐惧感!现在是震前瞬间的声光剧变,它既是地震前兆的高潮,又是震时最壮观的序幕。

凌晨三点四十二分,市内上空一道道青白色、紫红色的冲天光柱不时呈半圆形向上辐射,条带状、球状光交织相映,一束束闪光四起,放射出夺目的光芒,红、蓝、黄、白色闪闪再现。

只见地光过后,岩石圈内和原子就像泄了气的皮球,地壳小活动板块在自重和引力作用下,立即往下落去,冰冷的岩石层一接触到储存在地壳内的高温液体上,或高温溶浆体射进冷水中。就像热油锅里放了几滴冷水似地,岩石中原子和溶浆体立刻发生了爆炸,这股力使大地也发生了弹跳,先是上下,使岩石层有所松动,紧接着地面发生无规则弹跳,地壳板块出现左右摇摆和无规则猛烈震动,紧接着岩石内原子发生了核聚变式连锁猛烈弹跳爆炸,其声如击鼓撞击地壳。科呆子,你瞧,这个剧烈撞动和抖动进一步使岩石圈一层层岩石被高温击碎,进一步破坏了岩石圈整体性,地壳内部空间越来越大,而且该死的熔浆还在不断向这些区域扩充,使破碎的大榴辉岩石,又被爆破成小榴辉岩石,直至温差平衡方能停止爆裂。"

"是呀,难怪每次地震时间那么长,原来是这个熔浆坏东西在作怪,它总是每天晚上五点钟后就随着板块降速运动向内收缩弯曲的挤压力,悄悄地从地壳、地幔活动缝里退回地核内,或它被复制出的热能量也大大降低,使地震震级和次数相应在减小和减少。到了夜间两点钟时,板块活动缝无论地壳还是地幔,活动缝都已收缩到天衣无缝的地步。这时地幔像隔热板似地,已将地核隔开。这样反而大大加快莫霍诺维奇向断面内温度下降,同时板块不断收缩的挤压力,又使地壳内和原子内重新充压力似地,地壳又被高高顶得鼓起,地面再度发生大面积降温冷却,这种每天一次,北京时间夜两点钟后至六时前,继是板块内原子被收缩挤压极限释放能量时,也是板块运动的一元复始又重新依次突出下垂加速运动危险时的开始,下午五至十时前也是地下板块位移运动变化大、地磁场无规则性,特别地球自转不匀速最快这一年时期最明显,复制出的能量最厉害,地下水也最多。地震机会多,震级强,破坏力大,包括易使各种操作人员在同样情况、同样速度下确操作失控,发生各种意外事故现象,如车祸及在这个地区上空飞行的飞机坠毁等等。"

"老板,你快看,被这个熔岩高温高压坏东西一折磨,几十、几百公里的坚硬岩石圈已被破坏得四分五裂,松散、破碎地瘫痪在那里。"

"不错,地震过程就像破碎机似地,将一层层岩石进行破碎加工转化,我们俩在地壳内亲眼所见地震能这个造物主,怀育产生新的物质的野蛮性和长期性,每天白天受离心推力作用大,复制出熔岩高温就高,发出震耳欲聋的爆烈撞击声、弹跳声,使大地都发生了明显变型,要是不知情的人,真是吓得屁滚尿流。"

"地震能这个造物主确实太野蛮,而且它发生时间无规律叫人防不胜防,多少人冤死在它周围。那地震为什么不能统一发生在傍晚五到十时和夜间两时到天明六时的地震危险时呢?说起此事也比较复杂,各种因素也较多。但万事不离其一,谁给它不同能量,就可产生不同结果。就拿地核液体来说吧,它并不像炼钢炉内流出铁水一样纯洁的液体,地核在内部作螺旋式往复上下旋转运动时,一些固态物被旋转复制成如火山弹之类物体,均被离心力作用,同地核液体一同射进地壳、地幔活动缝内。这些固态物射入后,破坏了板块向内收缩,使其达不到天衣无缝的地步。当然,有些地区板块运动快,也有些地幔表面与地壳结合也不平整,有空道,地核就不受排挤,继续存留甚至还不断向低温地区扩散和漫延,寻找不规则合力产生地震,以造成

任何时间都可发生地震,这不过震级有大小不同而已. 因其它时间发生地震主要靠推挤摩擦产生出高温高压和熔岩。而夜间二点钟后地震就有三种作用力: 一、板块位移运动和板块向东, 也就是朝太阳一面突出下垂加速惯性推力大,复制出能量多。 二、地核熔岩进入活动缝内多。三、原子中心空穴内的如夸克,它的质量一方面受到加速挤压, 另一方面已被加速惯性复制出更多能量, 当它再次进入中心时, 无论色还是味, 立刻会使空穴中冷气体或地下水物质, 被它质量大的高温度蓝光等发生核聚变引爆。因此震级就强大些。同时每一次自发地震主震过后, 还有余震, 我们俩还要小心为好。"

"科呆子,你这个说法是违反能量守恒定律了,板块位移运动的推挤扭拉混合势能已释放掉,在短时间内那能再产生这么强的地震能"。

"不,不,老板,地震由两种性质产生的,一种是因果地震,一种是自发地震。因果地震是由板块位移运动或其它外力汇聚,而使板块承受不了推、挤、扭、拉的混合蓄力破坏,能量发生了释放而产生的地震。它的能量小,事先有征兆,通常没有余震和地光等,防治时可以向地下灌水,减少板块运动的势能储蓄和破坏。而我们刚才见到的纯属自发地震,它是通过球体板块运动结构变化,和被推挤摩擦力大小及地下水多少引起的地震,高温高压的熔岩是左右一古八直射入地壳表层活动缝周围空穴内。特别下午一至五时是强作用力场做出的能量大,来的突然,发生前后各种自然现象也较多,如地光、地声、地磁场异常、地下冒烟、余震以及动植物反常等。

并且自发地震有时还会有一种不可思议的能量, 这是人的情绪长时期受压制形成的, 一股看不见的运动 能量气或称波集聚,使这个地区加快加大板块运动速度和原子内能量复制。这个地区地震多了一个无形外力 合成,发生时来的突然、猛烈和震后事态发展明朗化。例如二零零肆年印尼等国遭受了严重地震和海啸灾害, 而且在较短时间内又能发生了7点6级余震。这是地震学家无法用现有地震理论能自圆其说的,那为什么会 发生这个大灾难? 而且震后会出现怪事呢。你看宇宙当初为了形成万物, 仅以弥漫气体运动和合成, 最终能 进化出恒星和各种物质。人类是因为有了气,才有意识能发明出各种新产品和能消耗各种物质,由于物质不 平衡, 又形成了志气、恕气、恨气、怨气。以及人类意识发明出地下核武器爆炸的力气等, 为宇宙进化出更多 地下水和新物质,并提供了新的气源能源波。你看中国地震论坛网上那个山东地震农民专家杨志敏,就能根 据这个气和波形成的地震云变化,进行地震预报。所以,印尼被杀的几百万无辜共产党人和老百姓,当时没 有用火化来烧毁掉尸体上的灵魂信息,那些溃烂尸体气体存有各种智慧数据,就像人体内血液一样输送给别 人,今后就有新的智慧合成出现一样。那股冤死的气流在宇宙运动长时期集聚复制,并同地壳、地核能量及 那个有水域环境气流进行合成。形成自发地震和海啸之势就更强大、也更有灵性了。向印尼人民发个好兆头, 伟大慈母苏加诺总统女儿将上任,大海为重大喜事,先欢欣发出海笑,也向台湾领导人发个好兆头,天意不 可违,分久必合气数已到,再有三任总统,2010年定在统一或同一个中国原则下发展,和如何对世界和平大同 一作切合实际负责任的贡献。了解宇宙万物形成规律,并不迷信。就知道那不仅仅是机遇和巧合及地下水多, 不信等待事态发展,或到中国科学院及华国锋主席处,核对有关当时前我的信件。

当今世界物理学家霍金天才是博土生好写文章。我是小学毕业,物理化学一窍不通。 连写出英文字都不认识和标点符号都不会打,而且没钱购资料看。长时期积善运动下世苦吃尽还受了各种气,几十年时间写出约十分之一与我工作从不沾边、同时周围没有人懂这方面知识或感兴趣的人。包括某某学报专家们对我感悟写的地震起因和防治、创立统一场论、伟大宇宙母亲大分娩、二氧化碳不是气候变暖罪魁祸首,及【【月球医生】】小说等,论证有没有申请诺贝尔奖的理由。 他们对文章中创世纪论点,没有用各界专家,如天文专家、地震专家、生物专家等等组成评审委员会进行联合评审,迫使他们叫我向其它专业性更强的刊物认证。

我知道地震是自然规律,可不好的政治前,为什么有此发生,如苏联解体前大地震,日本市场疲软前大地震,菲律宾内乱地震,台湾逆天行事闹台独大地震,第二年又闹台独又发生大余震,中国文化大革命前邢台大地震和粉碎四人帮前唐山大地震,特别是硕石雨,天地相应一点不差,一点不乱,当时天上出现三个火球,七七年一年内国务院总理周恩来、全国人大委员长朱德、国家主席毛泽东先后在一年内逝世。是不是世界文明史上少见的罕事。一颗星落吉林,粉碎四人帮没死一个人。另一颗星落常德,人民富起来了,就像糖山倒下来了相应。文革前邢台地区地震,预示人们像走上刑台的一场灾难及将到来。邓小平逝世前,天上也大下陨石雨(在山东),地上也发生大地震(在新疆),这是不是天地又应了两件事,老革命家领导人到此结束,新的领导人诞生。这是不是上帝或地壳内人类居住环境遭到我们人类破坏,暗示我们人类所作的恶结果呢?这么说,我们也向地壳内的人类学习,如台湾、日本发生战争,那个地方特别,就不需要像美国在日本掷原子弹那样来制止战争,只要在夜两时后,在地壳地幔之间活动缝深处内放大量热能,或直接用特大型爆炸震动,来诱发地震,甚至还能发生海啸,并且它不像美国人不给战争赔偿,如唐山地区7660余年和一万四千八百余年的前两次大地震后,地震波及地区内原子遭到强大破坏,使原子物质元素在唐山地下进化出几

千公里以上的大煤矿。当自发地震发生时,就不能向地下灌水了,这样做会助纣为虐,加快加大震级。" "你真说得呆话,地震时逃命都来不及了,还有那个不怕死的敢向地下灌水呢?"

"不对,不对,你不向它灌水,它自身会灌水。你看我们刚才所遇到的地下水,由于地壳整体性遭到地震能的严重破坏,那些地下水必然会向地震区域内游离。同时,地震过程中大量的地核热能,不断向地壳外部和地壳内部扩散,必然引起地下水进一步复制和气候环境的变化,如暴雨或干旱的异常天气,当大量的暴雨降落在地震区域内,已被地震破坏得四分五裂的地壳岩石圈层内,不断受地面水或地下水袭击降温,从而再一次激活地震能的爆发,水渗透越多越快,余震的震级就越大。因水在地壳内高温、高压等反应下就转化成"混合烃。这个"混合烃"不断被复制到极限时,发生大爆炸能量可强大。你看台湾发生了大地震,第二年下了场大雨后又发生了约6点8级大余震"。

"我也看到了这个现象,地面水和地下水都哗哗地向莫霍诺维奇间断面流去,地壳上板块冷却加快,看来地核液体一到,真要发生地震了。"

"老板,我们不能凭一点点经验和信息,就说某时某刻在某某地方发生多少级地震。你要知道地震的预报要比天气预报难得多。它也是在不规则合力运动作用下,还必须在事物发展的统一地中有一定强度,才能产生地震.有时甚至产生不了,这是什么原因,这可能是合力其中一个外力因素没有形成,如地球自转不匀速周期已到,突然降慢,离心力下降,造成合力不统一,因此就产生不了地震。或因地下水流入地壳内太多,降温、降压就产生不了大地震。所以,我听别人吹美国和苏联人能准确预报地震,我就发现,个别中国人只会为外国人吹牛皮,可外国人就是不争气,他们也不能准时预测在某时某地发生地震。可以这么说,不把先进的地震仪器放入地下,和了解地壳内结构承受力和板块运动状况,同地面上各种作用力数据结合,特别这个地区板块位移速度快慢的多少,产生地下水和温度变化及磁场等,就不能准确预报地震。

我们俩可不能大意,这个在不规则合力运动中产生的自然,当你通过先进仪器认真观察,它并不自然,它们有它们的运动形式和生存规律,它们之间配合得总是那样默契,当它们以为大势已去不能形成合力时,就悄悄地各奔东西,让地震能破坏的岩石在地壳内部,在新的不规则合力运动中产生新的物质和新的原子。如那些不含水"混合烃"油或原子中不同元素,同被高温破坏击碎岩石进行了合成,再经自转不匀速的能量进一步拌和加工,就可在绝对封闭静置环境的状态下,岩石原子进化成能燃烧的'石头'煤碳来,而一些没有被高温击碎的岩石化合物"混合烃"油就不易进入或少进入,就夹在煤碳中为阡石。这才是真正煤碳起源"

- "照你这么说, 地壳内到处都有煤碳了。"
- "那是不可能的,必须在一定范围,如地震带或板块活动缝地区较多,而在地震带地区岩石和其它方面不规则合力还必须具备转化产生煤的条件。"
  - "不具备转化产生煤的条件,这个地区就什么物质都没有了。"
- "话不能这样讲,自然界不规则的合力运动,确实是一个了不起的发明家,不同质的合力,在事物发展的统一场中可以产生不同质的结果。你看地震能本事多大呀,它所波及的地区十分广阔,虽然它一次次佘震消耗了它质量,使地震逐渐减弱和消失,但那些被推挤摩擦产生出高温高压和熔液,左右一古八直射入地壳表层活动缝周围每一个空穴内,并向两端形成了气旋团后,平均每天以15公里左右加速顺沿活动缝向前推进,约自我复制出的能量到了1个多月后高温高压极限时,会发生大余震或持续干旱天气。

因那地下水和高温高压形成的气旋团也像地面降雨地区规律一样,一段一段地区和时间才被加速复制出更多水去扩展它的地盘,甚至几百公里发生余震。它对地下各种物质的进化确实起到了一定作用。它如果是浅表性地震,岩石层内原子所吸收到化合物"混合烃"物质就少,煤炭的质量就差,而深度地震煤碳质量就好。或产生出石油就多"

- "这么说,地震过程是怀育产生新的物质过程。"
- "可以这么说,了解利用地震能之后,发现它功大于过。没有高温高压和板块运动及不匀速运动的合力加工,你再多树木在地下也进化不了煤碳。你看我们地球上煤碳存储量多雄厚,幅原多辽阔,请问世界上哪有这么多地区、有那么多树木沉积到地下而孵化成煤碳呢?"

而现在,那些地面水和地下水,又在万有引力作用下,它们也悄悄向周围地区被地震破坏得已四分五裂的岩石层上流去,水到之处,岩石层内发出滋滋的冷却降温声,蒸汽越积越多,形成了气旋团也越滚越大越快,拌和着地壳内压力明显再度增高,渐渐地使地壳地面又被高高抬起。这种每天夜两时后地核又乘虚而入进入地壳内,使不规则合力又在水的诱发下重新合成产生进化,这是解说需要的一种能量,主要是地壳内两个月左右,形成的气旋团就可使地下水在地壳内被高温、高压等反应变成"混合烃。这个"混合烃"不断被推挤摩擦发热复制到极限时,发生了大爆炸.地壳承受不了这个极限就发生四至六级佘震,又一次发生了一个岩

石层反弹,只听地下叮叮咚咚的爆裂撞击声又响个不停,其声如击鼓,大地也再度发生弹跳摇晃和变形,地 面错位变形也更加加剧了。"

"我的乖乖,从地震到现在甚至有近年把时间,余震还这么厉害,可是没有一次超过主震,这是什么原因?"

"你要知道地震的强度主要受三个方面制约,一、地壳板块的强度和板块内存在什么样原子质量,又划分三个因素:内部的强度、湿度和封闭性能;二、地核逃逸入地壳数量和温度;三、内部合力包括自转不匀速的离心力向心力推挤摩擦大小,以及意外能量补充的多少决定强弱,时间长短和对自然界破坏程度。例如,我们地球陆地特大地震周期各个地区有点不一,但总的大约发生在太阳黑子最多年,和地球围绕自己的倾斜极转最快年,及自转不匀速最快年统一机遇时每约33年左右一次,并有三年连续发震期向世界其它地震带区位移,其实这一年只快了一秒钟左右,全世界地震就多发生几千次,而且强度也相对增大,各种灾害增多,造成这一年多死多少万人。这时科学家就可根据地球上地震发生在"海洋壳"还是"陆地壳"和世界其它地区是否地震后,也发生了特大旱灾等各种数据结合。以后去计算它每天相对运动4.26米地幔上部,【指最快速】所产生地幔不同的推挤摩擦发热的温度,及它形成像龙卷风那种气旋团内部发生了一次次将质量加速复制和转化、再加速复制和转化复制到能量极限和时间,就知它下一次大地震将移师至何地发生和震级。或知余震,强震等是否减弱和消失。

因特大旱灾最易释放掉地球内部热气流复制地下水能量,就不能形成像龙卷风那种气旋团过程或规律性。或特大旱灾会发生特大地震前兆。那股强劲的地下热气流进入高空中 ,似作椭圆运动前进时质量到极端从上向下就一阵阵地产生一个个大湍流,向重力面场、向心力面场上向上冲击运动。反而受到这两种场上相反拉力,使气体逐步加大收缩弯曲作椭圆运动。这种椭圆运动在物理上称向心运动,因此得到了向心力向中心加速自旋。

进入中心气体在加速惯性中划出了小圆圈空穴,(也就是科学家所说如星系中心的黑洞空穴那样)。就起到了三种作用,一方面使空穴内外温度和压力不同一,另一方面它就像一台有加工能力的机器,经过系统连续加速运动,使各种气体在高速高压下在它空穴中心,就像滚雪球似地被系统越滚越大聚合成球状体。另一方面这个空穴场所,它似女性的子宫,或电脑复印机等工具,每被离心力从中心向外位移运动一步推挤摩擦,使空穴交界处产生出的冷热,因此就源源流长地转化出水分子。并在核的空穴中心不断地被聚会复制出更多的雨水,约一个多月后复制到能量极限时,就一阵阵地释放出狂风、雷电、暴雨降落,也降落在椭圆运动前进时沿途周边省市地区一个循环链。

如江苏地球自转不匀速五年半最慢年雨季雨水多,最快年雨水少,其中三年防汛年。特大旱涝还要结合地球处于太阳自转不匀速周期和公转周期中什么时间,甚至还要知道银河系自转不匀速周期和公转周期。这时就更准确预报江苏省干旱雨水多少时间,和全国各地每年干旱雨水多少时间。因南方气侯位移每年约1200公里以上向北方作周期不匀速运动。大体上最慢年南方涝北方旱,北方涝南方旱走势。

你看我们这次地下水和地面水,又重新激活了各种能量的合成,但地壳内岩石圈原子遭到明显长期地震能破坏而大量减少,地幔处所受向心力和离心力推挤摩擦发热积蓄的高温已被释放掉,再产生出这种大能量还需一个过程。同时再次下落的岩石层不能直接接触熔岩高温,因为以前的岩石破碎层已隔开下落冰冷的岩石块;其二、被地震能破坏的岩石圈密封性能已大大减弱;其三、强大的地震能加大加快了板块位移运动速度,原来需几十、几百甚至几万年才能达到,而经这一波折,只需几个月、最多几年就能使地壳板块的位移错位封住地幔活动缝口,或使活动缝口越来越小。

在地面上我们可以直接看到地震发生后,地面发生大的错位变形和产生地裂缝等等奇异地貌。这样,由两种作用力推挤摩擦发热的熔岩或地核逃逸到地壳内也相应在减少。特别地壳内部这时最高温度已下降到八百度不到,向地壳外释放。同时地壳的封闭性能也大大减弱,所以余震是超过不了主震的。我们这次地震发生在地球自转最快时,而现在前后算起来已有一年多时间,地核质量在速度极限时复制不出能量,就在惯性中向自转极收缩做降速运动,(地球的不匀速周期可能是约五年半左右,也就可以复制出的的能量能能使活动板块内发生六级左右小震)。

这么一来,地震所需要的合力全部受到限制,就是有些地下水、地面水也激活不了原子内产生更多离心力能量,来发生大地震了。更何况大量的原子被引爆,重新聚合产生一个个新原子和加大原子内发展的能量,还需一个相当高温高压去复制合成进化过程,因此地震将逐步减少、减弱、和消失。"

"老板, 你快看, 地震发生后, 地壳内温度增高, 大量的病菌和细菌甚至沉睡多年的坏家伙也一个个在大量繁殖, 争先恐后纷纷往地壳外活动。"

"我的妈呀,这些坏家伙摇头摆尾的神气像,边爬还边说,它们也要潇洒走一回,大捞一把。"

"十亿人民七亿赌,两亿人民在跳舞,有多少人热衷科学。" (原稿作于1979年十一月前)

参考文献:《宇宙、地球和大气》第一分册(美 1 阿西摩夫著 王涛、黔冬等译)。科学出版社 1976年

熊承堃 刘良俊 著《太极子物理学初论》。重庆出版社

#### 创立统一场论

#### 伟大宇宙母亲大分娩

二氧化碳不是气候变暖罪魁祸首,

作者简介: 孙纯武(1948年-), 男(汉族), 扬州市, 主要从事研究自然科学等;

作者声明: 我保证是此作品的著作权人,

单位名称、江苏省扬州三力电器集团 通信地址、中国江苏省扬州市西湖镇59号

电话0514-82822538 邮编225008

电子信箱: yzscw@163.com 博客http://yzscw.blog.163.com

# 从川大走出的数理化"三剑客"

# 叶眺新

**摘要:** 我国科学殿堂内外,民间科学为什么近 50 年间能跟上国际前沿科学主流弦膜圈说不断飞速前进的步伐? 赵正旭、王国雄、李后强等先生,曾分别都是从四川大学数学系、物理系、化学系毕业的,遇到他们类似遇到了仗义执言的剑客。川大有这种蕴含,在新的征程中能进入大学排行榜前列也当之无愧。

[叶眺新. 从川大走出的数理化"三剑客". Academia Arena 2010;2(10):32-46]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

关键词: 弦膜圈说 赵本旭 王国雄 李后强

# 一、数理化剑客以弦膜圈说为标准

以彭罗斯的巨著《通往实在之路》为标准,把书中最后归结的超弦、D 膜、圈变量、扭量理论等观点,加上我国科学追求者在这些西方创新前后所作的类似建树,统称为弦膜圈说。现在以弦膜圈说的标准来作我国大学的排名榜,行吗?

当今大学的排名成为国内外一种热潮。例如,2010年5月11日,"汉版高校排行榜"主要负责人、中国科学评价研究中心主任、武汉大学信管院博导<mark>邱均平</mark>教授,推出首个我国大学网络排行榜。其前20名的大学次序是:1北京大学;2清华大学;3浙江大学;4山东大学;5上海交通大学;6厦门大学;7复旦大学;8武汉大学;9华东师范大学;10南京大学;11东南大学;12西安交通大学;13中国人民大学;14华中科技大学;15北京师范大学;16南开大学;17吉林大学;18华中师范大学;19武汉理工大学;20兰州大学。

显然,<mark>邱均平</mark>教授把他工作所在的湖北地区的大学排名过多。我们不能说它有失公允。因为它类似也有一个严格的定量标准。例如,自从改革开放,我国恢复高考招生制度后,内地省份每年各大学对高考招生所定的收分线,以此为数据,作近 30 年来的网络统计评估指标体系,反映高校的竞争力,内地各省份都可以拿出类似<mark>邱均平</mark>教授推出的我国大学的网络排行榜,可以说也没有什么不对!

然而也有所谓亚洲大学的排名榜。例如英国高等教育调查公司QS公布的 2010 亚洲大学前 200 名最佳大学排行榜,前 20 名中,日本囊括 8 所居首,香港与韩国各 4 所,新加坡与中国大陆各 2 所。这个 2009 年之前均与英国《泰晤士高等教育期刊》合办全球大学排行榜的QS,始于 2004 年,是世界范围内被引用最多的大学排名。英国每年都要耗资约 220 万英镑,用于评选当年的大学排行榜;QS亚洲大学排名是QS世界大学排名的延伸。其中"学生满意度调查"的结果,是决定大学排名的一个关键因素。据最近报道,有八所英国大学,被举报到英格兰高等教育拨款委员会,说他们曾在过去的两年中试图给学生施加压力,以期望学生能在"全国学生调查"的问卷中,给学校打出更高的分数。这一指控使整个大学排名工作的公信力,都会受到质疑。然而学校方面的回也却不尽相同。如朴茨茅斯大学说,由于控诉都是匿名的,根本无法展开校内调查。莱斯特大学说,对于不允许的行为,相关规定应该说得更明确一些——英格兰高等教育拨款委员会有明文规定,学校不允许将该问卷和学校的排名或者学生文凭的含金量挂钩。

因此,类似亚洲大学这类排名榜的标准,只与大学的教学质量、学生的课余生活、住宿环境等等有关,只对学生从毕业就业机会去选择大学读书,有一定的导向作用。在亚洲大学排名榜"学术同行评议"的指标中,北大、清华和复旦被认为是我国同专业领域中的最好大学。这意味着中国高等教育未来的投资正在逐步显示出成绩,但中国大学还有许多地方值得努力,比如也许以弦膜圈说作我国大学的排名榜的标准,更具有吸引更多国际人才和增加教学资源的推动作用。

1、我们不否认各种大学排名榜中所列举的成绩,但各个时代有各个时代的标志。温总理诗作《仰望星空》中说,仰望星空,那无穷的真理,那凛然的正义,让心灵栖息、依偎。它是那样壮丽而光辉;那永恒的炽热,让心中燃起希望的烈焰、响起春雷。在当代基础科学中,可以说弦膜圈说正是这样。复旦大学校长、中国科学院院士杨玉良教授认为,中国需要让世界理解自己的价值观,这是消除误会的根本手段。这个重任必将落在未来中国的人才肩上。温总理说大学是"仰望星空"的地方,实际上就是考虑未来。中国大学需要培养与20年后中国大国形象相匹配的人才。北京大学常务副校长吴志攀教授说,就办大学而言,我们首先要从"古今中外之通例"中汲取营养。我国高校在多年的"遵命办学"制度和文化浸润下,习惯于一切按上级的指令办事。真正的拔尖创新人才,不仅要有宽广的国际化视野和对学术前沿方向的准确判断,更要扎根于中国改革开放的深厚土壤之中。

2、美籍华人学者,美国杜邦中央研究院退休院士,物理学家,现任《前沿科学》编委的沈致远教授,发表在 2008 年 6 月 1 日《科学时报》上的文章说,科学前沿是已知和未知的分界,开拓前沿是进入未知领域,群雄并起各显神通是大好事。加以欧洲核子中心的大型强子对碰机开始运行后,将提供新的试验结果。文武兼备多管齐下,万物之理突破有望,形势令人振奋,机遇百年难逢。中国是泱泱大国,经济持续高速发展,科学研究投入不断增加,自主创新已提上日程,有条件对基础研究作出更多更大贡献。试问:还有什么比万物之本更基础的呢?全世界有几千物理学家和数学家从事弦论研究,加上非弦诸论人数更多。阿根廷、荷兰、瑞士、西班牙、加拿大等都有人在最前沿作出一流贡献。我国从事这方面研究的有几人?有人说真正在做弦论者不超过 10 人,这或许低估了点,但人数之少肯定与大国地位不相称,甚至还比不上某些小国。究其原因可归结为"难"和"险"。研究万物之理对物理和数学要求极高,甚至要发展出新数学方法,基础薄弱者不得其门而入。怎么办?难道 13 亿中无人知难而进?探索万物之理,单枪匹马也能冲锋陷阵,人际关系的压制会相对减弱。

沈致远教授说我国真正在做弦膜圈说的"不超过10人,这或许低估了点,但人数之少肯定与大国地位不相称,甚至还比不上某些小国",笔者先以为沈致远教授在说谎,加之我国不少媒体宣传美国著名科学家斯莫林的《物理学的困境》,以"圈"与"弦"内斗的事实,力主弦论已破产的观点,就更以为沈致远教授在说谎。但在认真读了斯莫林的《物理学的困境》一书之后,才知不是这么回事。例如,湖南科技出版社2008年4月出版了李泳先生翻译的斯莫林的《物理学的困惑》一书,在该书开头11页至15页有,即使斯莫林是站在反对弦论者的代表人物的立场上,他也不得不承认:

"在美国,追求弦理论以外的基础物理学方法的理论家,几乎没有出路。最近 15 年,美国的研究型大学为做量子引力而非弦理论的年轻人一共给了三个助理教授的职位,而且给了同一个研究小组"。"因为弦理论的兴起,从事基础物理学研究的人们分裂为两个阵容。许多科学家继续做弦论,每年大约有 50 个新博士从这个领域走出来"。"在崇高的普林斯顿高等研究院享受有永久职位的每个粒子物理学家几乎都是弦理论家,唯一的例外是几十年前来这儿的一位。在卡维里理论研究所也是如此。自 1981 年麦克阿瑟学者计划开始以来,9 个学者有 8 个成了弦理论家。在顶尖的大学物理系(伯克利、加州理工、哈佛、麻省理工、普林斯顿和斯坦福)。1981 年后获博士学位的 22 个粒子物理学终身教授中,有 20 个享有弦理论或相关方法的声誉。弦理论如今在学术机构里独领风骚,年轻的理论物理学家如果不走进这个领域,几乎就等于自断前程。"

在新华网科技论坛,对此类似的报导有网友评说:这表明美国物理学已是一群"科盲"。笔者明白该网友的意思,也许是说,美国的这种体制压制了非时髦非弦膜圈说理论的创新,是类似科盲的错误。但斯莫林在该书 335 页上也承认,同样的体制也曾压制过非时髦的弦膜圈说。如对超弦理论的发展最有贡献的两个人,即格林和施瓦兹,是曾花了 10-15 年的时间,在系统研究当时并不时髦的弦论,因此他们的固执己见遭社会嘲笑冷落。一个名牌大学的系主任说,他很懊悔在 20 世纪 80 年代初没有说服同行录用施瓦兹。斯莫林还举例一些当年在大学迷上弦膜圈说的研究生,说没有叛逆的他们中的学友们都当上了教授,他们还毕不了业或毕业多年找不到工作。这是一种"苦味",且在我国改革开放前后在科学殿堂内外搞弦膜圈说的也类似经历过。

如果说这种"苦味",已在伯克利、加州理工、哈佛、麻省理工、普林斯顿和斯坦福等物理学界打得天下,是科学在叛逆与服从之间找到的平衡,那么在我国高校多年的"遵命办学"制度和层子文化的浸润下,这种找到平衡的弦膜圈说,直到今天也还没有在我国科学殿堂内外时髦过。如果说伯克利、加州理工、哈佛、麻省理工、普林斯顿和斯坦福等物理学界的"科盲"们,已经在变成了"科普",那么我们是否在把"科普"变成"科盲"了呢?新华网科技论坛网友"宇宙神"先生说,搞弦膜圈说的民间科学家是德高望重。但又洋味十足,曲高和寡,需要带上一点土气。和谐弦膜圈说的我国民间数十年挣扎,本身是"苦味"、"土气",哪里是"洋味"呢?

3、造成这种情况,中科院理论物理所著名超弦理论家朱传界研究员在《写在"2006年国际弦理论会议"前夜》的文章中说:弦理论在中国,在超弦的第一、第二次革命,以及随后的快速发展中,中国都未能在国际上起到应有的作用。我们在研究的整体水平上,与国际、与周边国家如印度、日本、韩国,甚至和我国台湾地区相比都有一定的差距。内地学术界对弦理论的认识存在较大的分歧,一些有影响的物理学家,基于某种判断,公开地发表"弦理论不是物理"的观点。受他们的身份和地位的影响,这种观点在中国更容易被大多数人接受,因而在某种程度上制约了弦理论在中国的研究和发展。从教育和人才培养上看,我国的世界一流大学如北大、清华,在相当长的一个时期内都严重缺乏主要从事弦理论研究的人才,这种局面间接地制约了青年研究生的专业选择,直接地造成了国内研究队伍的青黄不接。值得庆幸的是,在丘成桐教授的直接推动下,伴随着浙江大学数学科学中心的成立,以及随后该中心和中国科学院晨兴数学中心每年举办的多

次高水平专业会议,并邀请像斯特罗明格这样一流水平的学者到中心工作,大大地推动了国内弦理论方面的研究。2002年底,在中国科技大学成立的交叉学科理论研究中心。通过多次举办工作周和暑期学校,在超弦理论的人才培养和研究方面做了许多基础性工作。这种种现象都表明,中国的超弦理论研究,在平静的外表下,正积蓄着旺盛的爆发潜力。摆在超弦理论研究面前的,是一幅广阔的前景和一条艰难的道路,这是一条热闹又孤独的旅程,它所涉及的问题对年轻的学生和学者,有着强大的魅力,同时它对研究人员的专业素养有着很高的要求。我们正在为弦理论的第三次革命作准备,也期待着她的早日到来。

正是在这种背景下,我国开始了以弦膜圈说的标准来作我国大学的排名榜准备。例如 21 世纪的量子弦膜圈说,世界的弦膜圈说大国、强国,正是站在类似统一相对论、量子理论和基因理论的新高度,来看待基础学科拔尖的研究与竞争的。据类似 2009 年 11 月 14 日《中国青年报》报道,我国教育部已悄然在行动的"基础学科拔尖学生培养试验计划"的入选高校名单,目的就是培养拔尖创新人才。这 11 所入选高校是:北京大学、清华大学、南开大学、复旦大学、中国科技大学、南京大学、上海交通大学、浙江大学、西安交通大学、吉林大学、四川大学。当然争夺以弦膜圈说作标准的我国大学排名榜,未来则不只是这 11 所大学,也可能还有不少意料之外的大学,例如,北京师范大学、上海师范大学、江汉大学、南昌大学、湖北大学、武汉科技大学、西北大学、兰州大学、宁波大学,成都电子科大,中央财经大学等。再从我国科学殿堂内外弦膜圈说研究多元化线路图看,这些大学及其毕业生活跃且有不少成果,为国内之翘楚,且深受学术界瞩目。

说来我国大学和读大学的人不少,但笔者在外地求学、工作和参加学术会议偶遇的人中,真正研究弦膜圈说的也如凤毛麟角。说来也巧,在笔者研究弦膜圈说的数十年中,前后影响笔者很深、帮助很大的三位老师、朋友----赵正旭、王国雄、李后强等先生,曾分别都是从四川大学数学系、物理系、化学系毕业的。在搞弦膜圈说还是"苦味"的年代,遇到他们类似遇到了仗义执言的剑客。川大有这种蕴含,在新的征程中能进入大学排行榜前列也当之无愧。

# 二、赵本旭: 向高难度的数学进军

每当看到今天的基础科学国际主流正以高难度、高专业、高实验的态势飞速发展,把大部分的国家都抛在后面,使它们中的很多官方科学家和民间科学家都走入迷茫的时代,笔者就想起沈致远先生的《<mark>物理三问》:</mark>第一问,触及狭义相对论两大前提之一的超光速难道不违反狭义相对论?第二问:事关量子论之核心的海森堡不确定原理是普遍适用的吗?第三问:统一场论症结所在的时空是不连续的吗?首先来回答沈先生的第三问。

因为他的这三问,前两问也是和第三问相关的。而第三问是直接和他说的"几十年来,物理学家提出各种版本的万物之理——统一场论:弦论、圈论、旋子论、扭子论、时空非互易论等"相关的,即"时空是不连续",就是以上绝大多数基于的"时空量子化"。沈致远先生声称:"此三问有解之日,即万物之理初见端倪之时"。难道这三问我国没有人在解决吗?首先说"不连续"问题,笔者就想起赵本旭先生提示的拓扑学。赵本旭昭示的是,科学创新来自科学灵感,也许产生科学灵感的火花并不难,装扮成大发现、大理论、大原理也容易,但要在数十年后仍跟得上国际主流高难度、高专业、高实验的发展态势,谈何容易?

赵本旭先生,笔者与他接触、交谈不到半个小时,而且那是 1964 年在盐中读高中的事。笔者能回忆的情况是:从与他的谈话中知,赵本旭,四川射洪县人,可能生于 1938 年左右。那时盐亭县中学分高中部和初中部,两校相距约 1 里路,盐中图书馆设在初中部。那年冬天的一天下午课外活动时间,笔者到图书馆去借书,那是一本 1935 年出版的《世界科学名人传》,其中书后一篇是"爱因斯坦传",现在想来,这篇传记与笔者后来看到的所有"爱因斯坦传"都不同。例如它说爱因斯坦的父母为一位朋友担保一笔借款,后来这位朋友跑了。为赔偿朋友借款,爱因斯坦家办起了餐馆,爱因斯坦也失学在餐馆当服务员。由于爱因斯坦着迷科技书籍,常常在工作时间跑没见了。爱因斯坦的父母常常生气,但拿他没办法,到后来,只得把爱因斯坦留在这个城市,父母则搬到另一城市去做生意,而只是把生活费寄给爱因斯坦,让他自个去求学。很多年后,爱因斯坦成了大科学家,他父母也不知道。

由于这本《世界科学名人传》不能借出图书馆,只能在图书馆阅览室翻看,笔者和图书馆的管理员马老师约好,他给笔者放着,来时好借出。那天马老师不在,一位年轻的老师在帮他顶着。当我说明来意,他说该书他不知放在哪儿,但马老师等一会要来。于是和这位老师交谈起来,当他知道笔者名字后,他提到笔者姐姐的名字,问笔者认识否?当回答这名字是姐姐的名字,和姐姐的简单情况后,他说他的爱人认识笔者姐姐,并说他曾和笔者的姐夫是西南师范学院的同学,他们 1959 年同时考入西师,他考入的是西师数学系师资班,说是为大学培养教师。但 1960 年因自然灾害,西师数学系的师资班被国家撤了,并到四川大学数学系,于是该班的同学就多读了一年大学,到 1964 年才毕业分配。

后来笔者问过姐姐,赵本旭的爱人怎么认识她的。姐姐提到一件感人的事情: 1963 年的夏天,一次姐姐从盐亭去看在遂宁中学工作的姐夫,走到射洪县城郊渡口,天也快黑了,正遇河里涨大水,河这边没有了渡船。在焦急中,姐姐突然想起与姐夫曾同路,路过此地时,告诉过渡口对面有家人,是他读西师时的同学赵本旭的家,他曾在赵本旭家吃过饭,并告诉过赵本旭爱人的名字。于是姐姐壮大胆子,向对河大声喊赵本旭爱人的名字。果然有一位女子走出家门,问姐姐是何人。姐姐说明情况后,由于当时赵本旭不在家,又没有其他能撑船的男同志,这位女子于是冒着生命的危险,把停在她家门口不远一只渡船撑过河来,把姐姐接到了她家。这位女子正是赵本旭的爱人。姐姐说完这件经历后,再三表示感谢赵本旭夫妇这样的好心人。也许赵本旭老师从他爱人的口中已知道这件事,他才关心到笔者的名字与姐姐名字的联系,也使我们之间的交谈更感亲切一些。

例如,赵老师开始问到笔者的学习,有些什么学习兴趣?那是自然灾害刚过的年代,笔者能回到学校读书,是一些刻骨铭心的类似时空连续与间断的科学火花激起的动力使然。笔者出生在盐亭县天恒场一个贫苦的农家,那里有盘古故里和盘古开天辟地的传说,使笔者对开端和界面问题从小就有兴趣。1959年的一天,上一堂初中代数课,老师布置了一道求解人数的方程应用题,一位同学得出了三十二又二分之一个人的答案,老师批评他:"怎么会有二分之一个人呢?"这时,笔者的脑袋里闪现一个想法:一个人不可分,那么坚持"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世没竭",说是体现物质无限可分又怎能成立呢?这里的道理不是:对于一个稍大的层次概念或命题,它虽包含有许多层次,然而是无限可分的吗?它的无限可分,不是体现在必须变换概念上的吗?例如,人有很多层次,可以分成很多数量和内容的集团,而当分到一个人的时候,不能把人分割了,还看成一个人,但可以在有机物和细胞,甚至无机物的概念上分下去。以此类推,粒子分到一定层次必然不是粒子。由此延伸,使笔者注意到了时空连续与间断的互动影响,这一想法就是三旋弦膜圈说最初的萌芽。

因为这联系到 1959 年到 1960 年的严重自然灾害。饥荒中的沉思,如把活人和死人之间出现的那个界限,延伸到把类似活人的实在和客观,看成是整体、是球量子;那么活人死亡的实在和客观,就类似整体中的"破裂"----如这类似一张纸,中间的破裂,球量子就变成了环量子的有间断图像。当然沉思不能填饱饥荒;饥荒更需要的是粮食。那时,我国哲学上宣传更多的是讲物质无限可分观念,粮食能无限可分吗?在四川饥荒中,食物的翻切、破裂、拉伸、压缩,演绎的连续与间断、连续平面中间的破裂,缩影成类似圈体的联想,到1961年饥荒结束时,缩影成圈与点并存,且圈比点更基本的面旋、体旋、线旋等三种自旋的幻像。再到1962年上高中时,笔者又从观察到的,竹子早期生长发育的竹笋与后期竹桠枝端上发育的竹叶,有形态既相似又有不相似的类似生物重演的现象,把笔者和 1959 年开始思考的物质无限可分难题衔接起来,即对竹子"从早期端上的发育可以从后端上的发育看见"的类比,联系今天的物体可分,分立的个体有近似球面颗粒的表面,这是否预示着,宇宙早期也含有球面的类似"宇宙蛋"图像的界面呢?所以笔者对那时的弦膜圈说,也被称为类比原理、举一反三原理,或自然全息智慧。即弦膜圈说还仅是一种由此及彼的自然联系,与思维联系的印记。

赵本旭听了笔者的讲述,显得有些激动和苦闷。他小声对笔者说:"我比在西师多读 1 年大学,你姐夫读 4 年大学,先出来教高中,我在川大又读了 4 年大学数学,毕业出来只能教初中。我们学的数学好深啊,今后只能丢了"。但他又鼓励笔者说,你的那些弦膜圈抽象,今后可能还是大有用处。因为他相信一位川大教他的一位尊敬的教授的话:抽象的数学,有可能具有开拓出新的体系那样的大用,哪怕目前依然是思想游戏,也不是坏事。但他也警告笔者:只停留在科学灵感,拒绝高难度的抽象数学的学习,满足于立竿见影的实效、实用,不去作普遍化的追寻,那么类似自然全息的弦膜圈说,行之不会远,也永远是重复低效。

笔者反过来求他,有何捷径可走?赵本旭老师给笔者讲了一道难题:他说他和那位他尊敬的教授都长时期讨论过,这就是:"不撕破和不跳跃粘贴,把空心圆球内表面翻转成外表面,把它证明出来"。一听这难题,就使人惊讶:空心圆球不破,能内表面翻转成外表面,简直就类似悖论。但笔者相信赵老师的真诚。

考虑到我们的谈话太久,且当时强调的是突出政治,走红专,容不得半点活思想,笔者转而安慰赵老师,说不要太悲观:很多来盐亭的大学毕业生,分到区乡去教书,他能分在盐中教初中还算是好的。笔者为了鼓他的劲,还说一定把他教的难题记在心里,等到自己找到不撕破和不跳跃粘贴,把空心圆球内表面翻转成外表面的答案,再去感谢他。

1964年盐中的学生的伙食已经好一些,但种菜劳动,差不多仍然是我们高中班学生每天下午课外的必修课。加之高中功课也重,离初中部又远,笔者没有单独去找过赵老师,而且也没有再碰到过赵老师,高中就毕业了。但笔者心里确实装着赵老师的话。后来知道这道难题跟庞加莱猜想有关,一晃钻研了43年,随着佩雷尔曼2006年证明庞加莱猜想获得菲尔茨奖,笔者终于在2007年写出和在四川科技出版社出版了约90

万字的《求衡论----庞加莱猜想应用》一书,给出了一个答案。这类似"羊过河"的寓言故事:河上有座独木桥,一只白羊和一只黑羊分别从桥两头同时走上桥,走到桥中间要过河,而又互不相让。如何办?

把这个图案化为一维的弦线,引进到空心圆球内表面翻转成外表面,在球的内外表面之间搭成一维的 "桥"和"羊过河"问题,这是一个解答 1 维和 0 维结合的三旋抽象数学。也是弦论、圈论、旋子论、扭子论、时空非互易论等弦膜圈说解答时空连续与间断的统一场论。而且和湖北汽车工业学院王守义先生的"球绕流"研究、大爆炸宇宙论与物质族基本粒子质量谱,也有联系。其次,对照空心球内外表面翻转的 1 维穿孔看,在 1 维上针对仅取在一个点的操作,也能把球面和环面两个不同拓扑的类型结合起来。如果再联系三旋"大量子论",这如把长江河流大坝上下游,变成虚、实相对论的绘景形象描述;这里长江三峡大坝闸门,及其运作,就变成点内空间与点外空间的观控相对界。因此如果把大坝的"船闸"模型部分,换为"球绕流"模型,也能说明时空连续与间断的统一。

这里要说明的是,当笔者能向赵本旭老师送《求衡论----庞加莱猜想应用》一书时,已经打听不到他的消息。在一本《1950--1995年建国后在盐中工作过的教职工名录》的纪念册中,笔者查到28位姓赵的教职工,其中叫"赵旭、赵正旭"的先生有两位,就是没有"赵本旭"的名字。笔者这时才预感,也许当年赵本旭老师本身就没有被正式分配到盐中,他只是暂时在盐中等待再往农村中学分配。那时国家对数学人才使用超出了教育以外机制,这对年轻的数学家打击是致命的,很多像赵本旭这样年轻的数学家,为了做好拓扑学的研究,不辞辛苦,历时多年,但最终在毕业分配环节中,却看到研究不如自己的人被使用得更好一些,自然会不平衡,选择放弃。长此以往,我国的数学人才也许会像沙漏一般,一点点地流失。在如此长期的惯性环境下,如今也会看到,高校里的年轻数学家们已难想到与优秀的民间数学家相互往来交流,反而会是与各级有权的人进行更多的交往,只要了解到有权力的人追求的方向,就都会朝着这股主流方向,而更多所谓的冷门或是基础数学研究,却无人问津。赵本旭老师,你在哪里?

# 三、王国雄: 向高实验的物理进军

沈致远先生问的第二问:海森伯不确定原理是普遍适用的吗?沈先生说,海森堡不确定原理:一对共轭物理量,如位移 x 和相应之动量 px,必须遵从不等式  $\Delta$  x  $\Delta$  px $\geqslant$ h/4  $\pi$ 。其中 h 是普朗克常量, $\pi$  是圆周率, $\Delta$  表示增量。空间尺度  $\Delta$  x 缩小,动量  $\Delta$  px 相应增大,能量也随之增大。 $\Delta$  x 缩小到原子尺度(10 的–10 次方米),相应的能量是化学能;  $\Delta$  x 缩小到原子核尺度(10 的–15 次方米),相应的能量是核能。空间尺度缩小到普朗克长度(10 的–35 次方米),相应的能量比核能还要大一万亿亿(10 的 20 次方)倍。 $\Delta$  x 趋向零, $\Delta$  px 趋向无穷大,相应的能量趋向无穷大。在无穷小的空间中蕴藏着无穷大的能量!沈致远先生说:海森堡不确定原理不是很荒谬吗?

但这是沈先生把问题推向"宇宙极问"的结果。其实,海森堡不确定原理是以物理实验为基础的。今天 我国弦膜圈说能回答的是,实验产生波与粒之争,测双缝时存在,测单缝时不存在。它的计算取其中一种是: 无穷小量能量(对应点外空间)乘无穷小量时间(对应点内空间)=普朗克常数;或

$$(\triangle E) \quad (\triangle t) = h \tag{1}$$

这个公式背后,隐藏的是不确定性原理与庞加莱猜想的等价性。证明是,庞加莱猜想最简单的学术描述是:一个封闭的三维空间,若其上的每条闭曲线都可以连续收缩到一个点,那么从拓扑结构上看,这个空间是否就是一个球面。这个猜想要追求严格,能量和物质的先验与经验图像就有两个分岔:如果汽球只是一个长形的,或者球形的,那是可以做到的。但是,如果这个汽球是一个救生圈的形状,那就不行。因此要求的汽球,它的形状虽然可以随意,但是,里面的任何一根封闭的曲线,或者说绳套,都不会绕过一根类似柱子这样的东西,或者说,这个汽球看上去没有"孔",不象救生圈那样,可以把一个头伸进去。这样的汽球,数学家起了一个名字叫"单连通"。所以庞加莱猜想引出两个能量和物质的先验与经验图像:类似球体(简称类后体)和类似圈体(简称类圈体)。这对于任何正、负、虚、实、零五元数的时空,都是适用,所以成为几何数学和物质思维中的超验客体,为21世纪的球量子与环量子之争所注意。这是其一。

其二,庞加莱猜想把一个封闭的三维空间连续收缩到一个点,是把宏观与微观世界都包括在一起了,这必然引来与海森堡的不确定性原理的等价性是:庞加莱猜想实际是用确定性表达的,即"一个封闭的三维空间,若其上的每条闭曲线都可以连续收缩到一个点,那么从拓扑结构上看,这个空间就等价于一个球面"。它的奥妙是:闭曲线是一个被分割的图案,它指一种"间断";而"连续"收缩,指它的行为不间断。两者趋近于无穷小,能成立,就等价于三维球面。写成数学表达方式:无穷小量间断(J)乘无穷小量连续(L)=球面(Q);或

$$(\triangle J) \quad (\triangle L) = Q \tag{2}$$

量子理论的核心,光的波动性与粒子性之争的基础是小孔和双缝实验。普朗克公式中的普朗克常数恒量

h,是普朗克仿效微积分的微商的办法而假定的数。一开始普朗克常数是指波包的每一小份能量取决于它的频率,而在频率范围内存在有许多平均速度的粒子或电子,并非像后来爱因斯坦把一个光量子当作一个光子或粒子来对待处理,把量子看成是一份一份地辐射。这是从某一点上来考虑的,因为瞬时有若干粒子同时辐射,我们就无法区分分辨那一点的空隙是多少?通过什么技术手段来制造?是否海森堡的《物理学和哲学》就认为:只观察到了波动性,从来就没有看见粒子呢?对于粒子性只在想象或概念中存在,我们不管,反正海森堡的测不准原理或叫不确定性原理的公式表达(1),和上式(2),类似一个人的两种行为和思维处理方法,它们形成一个棱锥形。即式(1)类似棱锥形一端逃出势阱联系的扩散,式(2)类似棱锥形一端遇到障碍联系的收缩,它们构成了从宏观到微观物质不可分离的特性,能够解答从宏观到微观所有波与粒之争的疑难。这里什么叫"量子"?就是(1)和(2)的联立,它们不能分开;分开就不完整,也不完备。

爱因斯坦说:"上帝不掷骰子",他是主张"量子"为确定论的,实际是偏向式(2)一方。玻尔学派主张"量子"波与粒互补,是一种势阱和隧道效应模型,而成为一种不确定论,实际是偏向式(1)一方的。由于理论物理学至今没有提出庞加莱猜想与不确定性原理等价问题,所以到 21 世纪,在量子论和相对论已经产生的"场论"之外,还有不少专业和非专业人士不断提出新的以太、晕轮、轮晕、一锅盐渍蘑菇汤、可压缩流体、唯道等之类的介子模型场论,但这都不是根本的办法。量子论和相对论已经建立的场论,包含有一种"势阱"方法的描述,但只有扩散力,没有收缩力——各类基本粒子,有各类自己的"场",已经够多、够扩散的了;但这只是一种单一的量子行为和思维处理方法,遇到障碍就不知如何处理。所以这些量子论和相对论的场论,是一些单一程序的类似没有脑袋思维的场量子。庞加莱猜想完整和完备了从宏观到微观分立物体或量子的形象:球与环兼备,既能扩散,也能收缩。

科学和民主有联系,但不是绝对的。我国自然国学,有着深厚的弦膜圈说基础。例如,阴阳学说类似 D 膜反 D 膜; 五行学说相生相克类似圈论。"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世没竭"的庄子、惠子学说,类似讲弦论。如果说 40 多年前,毛泽东主席亲自领导和发动的物质无限可分说世界科学大战,是他领导中国人民和中国科学界的将帅们,用弦论向诺贝尔科学奖冲刺的一次伟大尝试。那么也许是科学界的将帅们,没有把毛泽东思想完整、准确理解好;也许是毛泽东主席有意要锤炼科学家队伍;也许是自然灾害大家都经历,但科学界的将帅们和底层群众所受的饥荒程度还是不一样,所以造成在我国只讲层次无限连续可分的层子模型。如果毛泽东主席当时就直白地讲弦膜圈说,也许就没有朱传界研究员所说的"在超弦的第一、第二次革命,以及随后的快速发展中,中国都未能在国际上起到应有的作用。我们在研究的整体水平上,与国际、与周边国家如印度、日本、韩国,甚至和我国台湾地区相比都有一定的差距"的情况。真是一脚踢成千古恨,一脚踢成"一猫两态"的宏观量子现象。

即我国既然坚持的是唯物和辩证法,既然自然灾害的实践已是事实,那么比科学界的将帅们经历饥荒更深体验的人们中,层子模型也许更能激起有人,把弦膜圈说中直白的连续与间断统一的大脑实验愿望埋在心里。笔者就是其中之一。

从进大学到毕业去重庆工作,笔者都在中文资料中寻求支持弦膜圈说的现代科学文献。也许1963年,于光远先生创办的那份自然辩证法刊物,在创刊号上中国第一次转载的坂田昌一的《新基本粒子观对话》,再到1965年6月,《红旗》杂志又加注释全文发表,《人民日报》和全国一些省的大报都纷纷转载这篇长文,正是我国照亮寻找弦膜圈说的方向和动力。因为如果以类圈体的面旋、体旋、线旋等三种量子自旋,编码与层子相对立的连续与间断统一的夸克模型,类似沈致远先生的《物理三问》的很多问题,都能自圆其说。而且1965年在大学图书馆类似《科学通报》的刊物中,笔者看到与夸克模型属于同一类型的大爆炸宇宙学,它预言的观察实验已被证实的信息。但当时这些都被当着反面的进展,来注释。大致在1967年,笔者在读《电动力学》时,发现书中一处提到,一位叫"缪"的西方科学家认为,如果电子等类似的粒子超高速自旋,会发生类似离心力作用的从球面变成环圈态;这类对圈论的支持,以及当年在武钢图书馆中,笔者还查到介绍普里高津的耗散结构的文献,耗散结构是与类圈体的线旋对应的,这些都使笔者对弦膜圈说增强了信心。所以1970年笔者分配到重庆,认识了王国雄老师,当听到他说,1968年他在四川大学物理系毕业前,听到他的一位不知名字的老师也在谈圈论,感到异常的兴奋。

王国雄,四川安岳县人,可能生于 1943 年左右。据第一次交往王国雄先生的介绍,他是川大物理系原子核物理专业 68 级毕业生。由于文化大革命,四川的最后几届大学毕业生都被送到军垦农场劳动,他们 68 级毕业生是等到 1970 年夏初才开始分配,他被分配到重庆市 96 中教物理。当时没有课教,他被安排在 96 中校办工厂带领高年级学生做教学模具。当时重庆市各中学做教模比赛竞争得很厉害,各中学和所属区文办都舍得拿钱。而当时重庆流行的高科技是搞可控硅。王国雄建议 96 中报了可控硅与单晶炉项目,居然很快被批准并上了马。

笔者所读的武汉钢铁学院,由于参加武钢第四号高炉大修,经冶金部批准,69 和 70 两级毕业生是推迟到 1970 年 10 月底才分配离校的。最后笔者是到重庆市大渡口区新山村的 18 冶 3 公司机修厂工作,厂房就在 96 中的操场边,职工宿舍就在 96 中校门口的公路对面。王国雄老师有时会到 3 公司机修厂,请求那里师傅帮助加工一些自己不能搞的配件。所以笔者进厂后,就听说 96 中在搞单晶炉、可控硅,感到十分惊讶。

因为在 1968 年至 1970 年,武汉在流行搞射流技术之后,搞热门的可控硅技术更是占了上风。可控硅生产需要单晶硅,而生产单晶硅需要单晶炉。笔者在大学就亲自参加过制造单晶炉,那可不是一件容易的事。

那是毕业前的 1969 年秋天开始的,武汉钢院虽然全院师生都参加了武钢第四号高炉大修,但笔者所在的一个班却被抽调到武汉钢院实习工厂劳动,其中就有协助制造单晶炉的任务。那时制造直拉法单晶炉,机身像个几顿重的显微镜或 2 米多高的冲床,由铸铁铸造而成,这也是为起稳定作用。炉子由炉体机械部分和电控系统两部分组成。炉体为一带水套的不锈钢炉室,其内装有由石墨加热器和石墨保温套构成的热场。籽晶轴和坩埚轴分别从炉室顶部和底部插入炉内,两轴具有转动和升降的机械传动系统。为了保证拉出的单晶硅的纯度,不锈钢炉室、石墨加热器和石墨保温套等加工,都有一定的难度。在安装、调试阶段,更是加班加点连夜干。当然这对一所工科大学来说,也许并不算很难,但对王国雄老师和 96 中来说,将是怎样一个情况呢?

大约是 1970 年 12 月一个星期天的上午,笔者走进 96 中的校园,校办工厂就在校门口旁边,找到王国雄老师,说明来意要参观他们的单晶炉。而王老师让看的单晶炉,是在校办工厂旁边一间空着的教室里,摆着的是一些钢筋制成的支架床身,更让人惊异的是,炉子不是为保证拉单晶纯度的不锈钢炉室,而是一个清洗干净的大的旧油铁桶子。而操作人员除王老师外,就是他从全校挑出来带领的那七。八个高中学生。笔者真不敢相信这能拉出合格的单晶硅。笔者说明了自己的情况和经历,也提了好多问题。王老师的许多回答,则是要让笔者相信,他们不但拉出了单晶硅,而且制造了可控硅元件,并且得到了市和区文办的表彰。

从这时开始,如果说笔者和赵正旭老师的交往只有半天的话,那么和王国雄老师的交往就有整整 10 年时间,除中途有几年在綦江铁矿施工外,几乎每周都有一次碰面。谈的几乎都科学前沿的创新问题。开始是谈他为啥知难要搞单晶炉的思想原因,他谈得最多的就是用实验说话,是搞前沿科学的一个重要特征。他说,他是学原子核专业的,如果允许,且有资金,原子弹他也想搞出来。他说我们应该相信,物理讲事实讲的就是实验的事实。实验难,于今前沿科学更难。因为前沿科学纷繁复杂,常把假象呈现在思维面前,喜欢说谎话,要继续登上高峰,当然更难。但近代科学的兴起和发展说明,决定性的是通过实验说话,破解奥秘。王老师的话能打开笔者心中关闭了五年之久的大门吗?

毛泽东主席的思想既有无限观,也有消亡观,中国传统国学自然同样是既有无限观,也有消亡观。例如,知果说惠子的"一尺之棰,日取其半,万世没竭",是无限观,那么墨子的"端"是不能无限分割的最小单位,就是消亡观。这是连续与间断数学的并存。1959 年的特大自然灾害,可以看成一场实验,证明平面食物中间破裂变成圈态,圈子与圈子的耦接,可以把连续与间断辩证地统一起来。1964 年在赵正旭老师引导的不撕破和不跳跃粘贴,空心圆球内表面能翻转成外表面的类似庞加莱猜想拓扑学的高深数学,又再次证明,不管正负虚实零空间,都存在球面与环面不同伦的两种形状。但 1965 年 6 月《红旗》杂志刊出坂田的文章《关于新基本粒子观对话》,只把球面物体和连续统一起来,认为这类连续是永远不会间断的。1964 年 8 月和 1966年 7 月在北京举行的两次国际科学讨论会,把这种数学、物理、哲学推向高潮,并通过层子模型的具体形式,把球面形态和连续统一锁定,在学术界产生了广泛的影响。这类球面形态连续无限可分的哲学,为我国绝大多数学者普遍接受,好似提前在为文化大革命的可行性提供科学注释。加之在那段特殊的时代背景下,林彪、四人帮的干扰,层子模型被认为是毛泽东思想指导,运用于自然科学研究之典范,即使在文化大革命发动后,理论研究以及与国内外学术界的交流都几乎完全中断,有的投身"文化革命",有的关进"牛棚",有的无所事事,但这种数学、物理、哲学的单一基本形状不变的连续与间断统一的观念,更被保护,而无处不在,成为监视科学的"眼睛",使类似圈子与圈子线旋耦接的连续与间断统一的弦膜圈说的创新,成了失语症。

在参与搞可控硅、单晶炉的劳动中,笔者有一种念头产生:把 20 世纪兴起的粒子物理学,对应可控硅,可不可以把基本粒子对应单晶炉?如果把类似层子这种数学、物理、哲学的单一基本形状不变的连续与间断统一的基本粒子,设定为是存在间断的拓扑学形态不同的类圈体,把这类存在间断形状的类圈体看成"可控基本粒子",那么这类可控基本粒子,这种"单晶炉"在失语症的特殊时代背景下,能不能制造?怎样制造?笔者产生了存在"大脑实验"论的想法:"大脑实验"不是思想实验、理想实验,也不是不做实验,而是动脑、动手、动脚地去观察自然,或以自然全息为基础做的一些类比实验。如为了理解弦膜圈说,笔者就做了麦比乌斯带、九连环套、圈子孤波演示链等模型,去模拟、去举一反三。在"大脑实验"的指导下,"可控基本粒子"如果是弦膜圈说,那么在数学、物理、哲学上的如何"间断"可分,就可以设定是自旋性质。这

类似物质与能量的间断可分,"可控基本粒子"是"单晶硅",弦膜圈说类似面旋、体旋、线旋的自旋性质编码是"可控硅",就像光的颜色,可以定量、定性地描述有限的基本粒子和多种各类微观粒子。这里的自旋、颜色等性质,与环圈、球面等形状的区分和间断,正如物质与能量的区分和间断一样。

但如何说明这也是一种实在性?笔者在武汉钢院读大学看到现实的单晶炉制造的艰难,对业余民间科学能否搞可控基本粒子的"单晶硅",感到渺茫。

是王国雄老师在 96 中领导学生搞的单晶硅,重新唤起了笔者的热情。很多年后,笔者才知道,直拉法单晶炉并不是单晶炉生产的唯一形式,例如,我国现在就有太阳能硅单晶炉制造,并且近年来在太阳能光伏市场的拉动下,单晶硅炉产量直线上升,国内单晶炉国产化率达到 97%以上,有个别厂家的单晶炉已批量出口进入了国际市场。而王老师搞的单晶炉,其原理也许是类似太阳能硅单晶炉方面的探索。当时王国雄也在探索激光的运用,他说依靠现成的直拉法单晶炉设计,跟在后面亦步亦趋,不能实现根本性的突破。而新的想法如果自己不去做,老想依靠别人,就只很难拿出自己的东西。反过来,他也支持笔者基本粒子的基本拓扑形状存在类圈体的见解。他积极地帮助打听他们母校四川大学物理系,他毕业前听到的谈圈论的老师是谁?研究情况如何?但费了百般周折,一无所得。

很多年后,笔者也才知道,也许是 1968 年,韦内齐亚诺提出用小小的一维的振动的弦来模拟基本粒子。而早在 20 世纪 20 年代前后,卡鲁扎以柱面条件和增添第五维,统一了广义相对论和电磁场方程。克莱因又以驻波加玻尔能级圆圈,推算出第五维微小圈半径可到普朗克尺度,而强化了卡鲁扎方程。所以 1968 年在韦内齐亚诺的观点公开之后,卡鲁扎和克莱因的圈论在西方再度热炒。因此在 1968 年到 1970 年的川大,有懂外文并能看到这类材料的个别老师,也许是在亲近的同事之间透露一点信息,而不是他自己的独立研究。在那时,中国的统一的思想、统一的指挥,理论物理科学的主流是层子类似的观念一统天下。王国雄到处托人到川大打听,别人以为是抓阶级敌人更不敢乱说。但在这个过程中,王国雄老师联系到在重庆沙坪坝教中学物理的戴特力先生。王国雄常把从戴先生等那里听的那时我国的新物理探讨群体的信息,传递过来。这主要是继北京组织的"层子"实在性之后,重庆已正在组织酝酿开辟实在性的"快子"战场。

了解到这种前仆后继的"实数无限观",笔者和王国雄的讨论认为,这种实在观的世界科学大战,我国也许还要打一百年;而 20 世纪兴起的粒子物理学,可以说 70 年代开始才真正是一个转折点。因为盖尔曼在提出夸克模型时,基于夸克分数电荷的奇异特性曾说过:"考虑夸克是实物粒子是可笑的",这其实是暗示基本粒子排斥"能量"而以"物质"连续性标榜的实在性,已经在寻找类似虚数实在的形状"间断性"的代替描述,但还不是很清楚。可是到 1968 年韦内齐亚诺提出弦论,已经找到"形状"分野的代替概念,但遇泡利不相容原理的困难。于是到 1970 年,南部一郎对韦内齐亚诺方程再补充,用了另一种类似颜色观点的"性质"来解释,实际已经把基本粒子"能量"和"物质"连续性统一的实在性的数学、物理、哲学描述,分为"形状"类型和"性质"类型的两种区分。而类似弦膜圈说的"形状"及其类似振动的"性质",就更能单一地显出基本粒子"能量"和"物质"连续性统一的实在性。

引起这种实在性的争论,应缘于爱因斯坦相对论和薛定谔量子力学等数学方程中包含的"虚数"因子的去留和解释。彭罗斯寻求扭量套圈和黎曼球图像的描述,实际是守旧穿复变函数的"旧鞋",走"形状"类型和"性质"类型的两种类型统一的"新路"解释。他把这称为更彻底的观点。其实,弦膜圈说的类似面旋、体旋、线旋的自旋性质,也能够满足泡利不相容原理,并能给南部一郎的"颜色"类似的性质代替,以实在的结构形状和性质类型统一的能量及物质之间连续与间断的结合性描述。王国雄先生认为,如果这种弦膜圈说被看成他的"油桶子"拉的"单晶硅"、做的"可控硅"实验,那么武汉钢院的直拉法单晶炉,就类似国家级实验基地的大型强子对撞机、正负电子对撞机,笔者的发展方向虽仍是要向着高级高能的实验进军,但这首要一步是写出笔者弦膜圈说的数理规范论文。

到1972年夏初,笔者已被确定要从重庆市大渡口区派到綦江县小渔沱、麻柳滩去"大打矿山之仗",自学条件会更差;论文发表更看不到尽头。王国雄先生仍用我们初识时就说的一些话,鼓励笔者,如"只要你的知识仓库装有货,就不怕今后找不到用处"。甚至每次见面,他都要找一些民间类似的谚语来启发,如"家中有粮,心中不慌";"留得青山在,不怕没柴烧",等等。他的意思是,文革总有结束的一天,等到今后形势好了,才去搞弦膜圈说研究就晚了。在他的鞭策下,笔者决心先走自学理论物理专业的道路,先后到重庆解放碑旧科技书店买了《数学物理方法》、《统计物理学导论》、朗道等著的《场论》等自己没有的课本。王国雄先生也他学的《量子力学》和北大编的物理专业用的上下册《高等数学》课本借给笔者。就这样在冶金部第 18 冶建公司川南綦江麻柳滩采选厂的建设工地,开始了攻克《基本粒子结构不是类点体而是类圈体》第一篇论文的"地下工作":下班后笔者同 10 多位工人挤住在一间昏暗的工棚里,周围是车辆、机器的轰鸣声和倒矿渣的声音。没有桌子,就在床上自制了一张可以推进拉出的木板,每天下班后,不管多么疲劳,满

是油渍的工作服也没脱,都要趴在木板上干一会儿"私活"。

1974年秋一次王国雄先生到綦江县出差,顺便到綦江铁矿来看笔者,他带来戴特力老师说重庆大学、重庆建筑工程学院和北京等地几十个搞基本粒子的同志,已经出版了3期《新物理探讨》的大型期刊专集的消息。重庆大学等院校搞的超光速新物理探讨的"快子",沿袭了先前层子模型类似对美国、苏联与日本等国粒子物理研究的一些主要流派进行分析的批判。例如这些"快子"老师,有人说西方高能物理当时流行的"靴袢"假设,在那么微观的基本粒子之间,还存在"弦线",不但"虚"得难以理解,而且是把资产阶级的"民主"搬到了强子物理,而重庆组的快子则是实的粒子。应当说,这在当时既是发展了层子的"实",又超越了相对论的不要"虚"。但也听得出,这对弦膜圈说不走国内主流的道路,是更加上了一层压力。但笔者也看到,国内的层子和快子学派,只是以老的实验总结,从口头上坚持唯实,少有新近亲自做的实验材料。相反,国际主流科学家虽是虚的夸克和快子,却一直在围绕实的高能粒子非弹性碰撞做大量的实验,这是不断跟着用新近的实验事实说话。于是笔者把已经完成的《基本粒子结构不是类点体而是类圈体》论文初稿,交给王国雄先生看。并说明这是用自主创新的三旋类圈体"圈态密码"观念,对夸克模型作的分隔、符号编码信息化的一种处理。

当时笔者是在第 18 冶金建筑公司工地当工人,为了把论文多抄几份寄出去找有关部门审查,笔者先找 18 冶公司宣传处的熟人打印,不想当年对打字机控制很严。笔者决定再找组织,对口的是 18 冶科技科。18 冶是几万人的大单位,全国各地大学毕业分配来的学生有七、八百人,18 冶科技科陈科长很负责任,找了一些大学生来看,没看懂;他又找了一个重庆大学的老师看,也没看懂;他就把论文原本寄到中国科学院,也没有回函。陈科长如实告诉笔者,论文难认可,他已无能为力。这事多年后,陈科长还给已离开 18 冶的笔者回信作证,仍然如实说明笔者写弦膜圈说论文的这个情况。王国雄老师也可以作证,当时他听了笔者介绍,即使按他的意思干了近 3 年,论文连打印都难的情况,于是他收下论文底稿说,他拿去找重庆大渡口区文办帮忙打印,他和那里的领导关系不错。

事情之难,他忙了半年也没做成。但我们关系更密切了。王国雄先生是最早支持弦膜圈说的我国第一人。是他的精神支持,使这篇论文分成两部分延伸研究,直到改革开放多年后的 1986 年,才分别以《前夸克类圈体模型能改变前夸克粒子模型的手征性和对称破缺》为题,发表在《华东工学院学报》1986 年第 2 期,和以《从夸克到生物学》为题,发表在天津师范大学创办的《交叉科学》杂志创刊号上。结束 10 年浩劫的 1976 年姗姗来迟,这年笔者从綦江铁矿麻柳滩工地随 18 治 3 公司大部队抽回重庆市区,转战市中区重庆长江大桥建设,和王国雄接触的机会又多起来。1978 年 3 月 28 日至 31 日,在北京召开了"全国科学大会",之后,科普报刊异军突起,面向农村区县的"科技报"出现异常火爆,全国各省、市、区县都有"科技报",许多省、市、区县的科技报发行量还十分巨大,成为中国科学春天来临和蓬勃发展的一个标志。笔者产生了有其等把爱人、孩子从农村乡镇调到大城市,不如自己从大城市调回农村区县寻找科学出路的想法。

那时笔者虽然已经调到 18 冶大公司机关工作,但很多时候是下工地。爱人、孩子从农村乡镇到重庆来探亲,没住处,也是王国雄老师腾出他家的一间寝室让我们住的。想到和他初认识时,他说的文革会结束的话,和知识仓库要未雨绸缪的话,更感到他的远见卓识。因此笔者常找他权衡调回农村区县,对自己搞研究的利弊。在多次的交流后,他的意思是,只要改革开放,道路还是有的。这当然不是类似霍默•G•巴尼特在《创新:文化变迁的基础》中说的:"创新是指在实质上不同于现有形式的任何新思想、新行为或新事物"。如果创新仅靠"不同于现有形式的任何新思想、新行为或新事物",那么类似改革开放前我国所做的一切大事,不但是创新,而且改革开放后类似众多科迷们不向大型强子对撞机、正负电子对撞机之类的高级实验靠拢,而是要求实验要向他们提出的各式各样高能物理理论的创意靠拢,也是在创新。但这却是王国雄先生反对的。

当然他也看到,自第二次世界大战结束以来,美苏借助科技成为超级大国,西欧、日本也借助科技成为发达国家,而我们这个具有悠久文明历史的大国至今却仍然是个"发展中国家"。如果人类不分种族,其智商都是大致相同的,那么,作为世界人口数量最多的中国,其智力资源的"蕴藏量"应当是最"丰富"的,为什么我们的科技水平却比不上那些人口数量远比我们少得多的科技强国和发达国家呢?我们的智力资源究竟是没有完全发掘出来抑或是用错了地方呢?他认为,弦膜圈说已经是能把"大脑实验"建在国内,把大型强子对撞机之类的真实实验和跟进理论证明,建在国外的生产自主知识产权的道路之一。所以王国雄老师也支持笔者回到家乡农村区县去工作的想法。1981 年 4 月笔者调离重庆,到如今就没有再见到王国雄先生的面。1988 年 12 月,笔者到重庆参加一次全国学术讨论会,从戴特力老师口中打听到他已经调到重庆市教仪站当了站长,但专门去找了两次,也没有没有见着。王国雄老师,你在哪里?

#### 四、李后强: 向高专业的化学进军

沈致远先生问的第一问:超光速难道不违反狭义相对论?沈先生说,纠缠光子之间具有超光速作用,是许多实验证明的客观存在,这是无法否定的。我们必须放弃主观偏见,承认纠缠态中超光速传递信息是客观事实。沈致远先生说的是"实数"超光速论,这同 1973 年开始的重庆大学、重庆建筑工程学院等几十个搞基本粒子的同志出版的《新物理探讨》的大型期刊专集,搞的超光速新物理"快子"探讨的观点相似。也许在毛泽东主席逝世后,到美、英等西方科技强国的类似沈致远先生这样的第一代华裔科学家,谈论基础科学,如果入不了美、英等西方科技强国的弦膜圈说主流,会常回国求助国内思辨的创新力量。

这类思辨如新华网论坛的"遥望星河"网友说,热大爆炸宇宙学模型讲:宇宙开始于高温、高密度的原始物质,最初的温度超过几十亿度,后来发生了大爆炸,温度急剧下降。随着温度的下降,宇宙开始膨胀。但根据数学上极限的概念,无穷小的极限是零。这就是说,今天我们所认识的宇宙在过去是一个零!零即是无,怎么可以无中生有呢?数学上的一个零怎么可能变成今天的宇宙呢?只要是稍有点常识和思维正常的人,都不可能相信今天的宇宙是从一个所谓高温、高密度和无穷小的奇点开始膨胀的。相对论和宇宙大爆炸理论为什么会有如此荒谬的结论呢?这是因为相对论是一种错误的理论!相对论的谬误就在于错误的假定了光速不变狭义相对论基于两个基本前提:相对性原理及光速不变原理。而网友"宇宙611"说,2010年被誉为"东方诺贝尔奖"的邵逸夫奖5月27日在香港公布得奖名单。3位美国学者被认为在解开宇宙年龄方面取得重大成果,成为天文学奖得主。因为评审会认为,3位美国学者领导的探测器实验,测量结果开创了精确宇宙学的时代,对天文学、宇宙学和物理学产生重大影响。但看来评审会主席就是不懂天文地理的洋奴才!!!

不论类似《物理学的困惑》一书的作者斯莫林这样的国际著名圈论科学家如何攻击弦论,实际,美、英等西方科技强国弦膜圈说主流内部的斗争,并不是使弦膜圈说前沿科学瓦解,而是飞速在使国际前沿科学弦膜圈说专业化方面争经费。这种标志证明是,反"暴涨宇宙论"和弦论的国际著名扭量论科学家彭罗斯出版的《通往实在之路》的巨著。《通往实在之路》一书通过对人类几千年来在自然量子形式体系方面研究的总结:如对"古代定理和现代问题;物理世界里数的种类、奇幻的复数;对数、幂和根的几何学;实数微积分;复数微积分;黎曼曲面和复映射;傅里叶分解和超函数;曲面;超复数;n维流形;对称群;流形上的微积分;纤维丛和规范联络;无限的阶梯;时空;闵可夫斯基几何;麦克斯韦和爱因斯坦的经典场;拉格朗日量和哈密顿量;量子粒子;量子代数、几何和自旋;纠缠的量子世界;狄拉克电子和反粒子;粒子物理学的标准模型;量子场论;大爆炸及其热力学;早期宇宙的推测性理论;测量疑难;量子态收缩中的引力角色;超对称、超维和弦;圈变量;扭量理论"等32个阶梯的梳理,使她成为既是一本弦膜圈说的大百科全书,也是一本弦膜圈说的专业教科书。

在对斯莫林、彭罗斯等弦膜圈说主流内部斗争的认真研究分析,可以看出这仅是西方弦膜圈说内部各方之间的名利、资源争夺使然,并不是他们之间在学术高难度、高专业、高实验方向上有根本的分歧。实际,在毛泽东主席逝世后,物质无限可分仅类似实数的、球体粒子型的连续和间断的观点,至今在大多数民科和官科的创新中,也并没有根本的分歧。区别在于毛泽东主席逝世前,这类层子、快子前沿科学的优势,是在我国还比较一统,但在毛泽东主席逝世后到今天,已分裂创新得五花八门,看似繁荣,却更不可信,且对前沿科学实验没有任何冲刺的力量。我国何时才自己的弦膜圈说的大百科全书和专业教科书呢?这就是"山风"网站创办"弦膜圈说"专栏的起因。

这里沈致远先生既然说到纠缠态的两个光子,具有超光速相互作用,测定一个光子的自旋,远处的另一个光子自旋立即相应改变;爱因斯坦称之为"怪异的超距作用"——最近瑞士日内瓦大学的一个研究组在光子纠缠实验中,测得其速度至少超过光速一万倍。奇怪的是,国外已承认印度科学家森的虚数快子学说,国内要么只做不说,要么还是原来的实数快子观点。如 2008 年回到中国科大全时工作的潘建伟教授,已经与同事一起利用冷原子量子存储技术,首次实现了具有存储和读出功能的纠缠交换,建立了由 300 米光纤连接的两个冷原子系统之间的量子纠缠;实现了首个"量子中继器"。2009 年初潘建伟把在海德堡大学的实验室整体搬回了国内,在合肥市 5 个不同地点之间建成了秘密通话的世界上第一个可自由扩充的多节点光量子电话网。潘建伟、彭承志等的中国科大一清华大学联合研究小组还在北京八达岭与河北怀来之间实现了 16 公里的量子态隐形传输。这是由于在星地量子密钥分发方面的国际竞争异常激烈,国家已为他们启动了最终实现空地、星地量子通信、全球化量子通信研究的资金。这一切其原理,也就是沈致远先生说的量子隐形传输。

1993 年来自 4 个国家的 6 位科学家将这一神奇的现象在理论上揭示出来。即处于量子纠缠的两个粒子的量子关联,坚持"去虚数存光速"的经典观念是无论如何都无法理解,但承认印度科学家森的"虚数快子"加"存光速"的互动,就是一种可资利用的超经典力量,并可以成为具有超级计算能力的量子计算机和"万无一失"的量子保密系统的基础。但这一切在毛泽东主席逝世后,到西方科技强国深造过的类似潘建伟这样

的第一代中国科学家,为了避免与经典的爱因斯坦"去虚数存光速"观点作"内斗",是多做少说,着重工程技术的进展。而类似郭光灿这样短期出国深造过的中国科学家,量子纠缠隐形传态虽也着重工程技术的进展,但与沈致远先生类似,仍坚持难言之隐类似"去虚数保实数"的快子,也就在所难免不非难专业化的弦 膜圈说。

这是为什么呢?这同在毛泽东主席逝世后,大批专家也并没有解决好"无中生有"的量子纠缠,从经典过渡到量子力学的自旋有关。但"无中生有"既然是古代就提出的老子自然国学问题,就不能没有人在研究。南京大学教授沈骊天博导说:"三旋生万物"。量子纠缠与无中生有相关,无中生有与自旋相关。因为如果把汤川秀树说的基本粒子的自旋是一种内禀现象,和卡鲁扎--克莱因遗产中的第五维是微小圈结合起来,就是我们说的 50 年前萌生的三旋环量子理论。一个环量子类圈体能作面旋(如圈体的滚动)、体旋(如圈体的翻动)、线旋(如圈体表层绕中心的免动)。在存在不动点质心的情况下,一个全对称的环量子类圈体能不相矛盾具有 62 种自旋状态,即 31 倍于球量子粒子客体自旋态。所以对沈致远先生说的量子纠缠隐形传态的超光速的"实",从环量子类圈体模型的角度也是可以理解的,即有了这种三旋模型,量子纠缠就存在于非粒子环量子圈态客体的三旋之中。

现在我们来具体说明爱因斯坦、波多尔斯基、罗森发现的量子 EPR 效应。众所周知,指南针在地球各地除两极外,都能定向相同指向南方。这个道理很简单,是因为地球磁场对指南针的作用引起的。因此也说明如航天飞机或人造卫星离开地球,或在受磁性材料干扰的地方,用指南针定向是不适用的。但科学家们找到了一种陀螺罗盘,不需靠磁力线的作用来定向,而是利用陀螺本身的多层自旋来定向的。这种自旋定向的原理,揭示了自然界中自旋调制耦合功能的 EPR 效应普遍存在。然而在宏观物体身上是很难做到。非粒子量子圈态自旋客体,因为三旋是它的自然属性。因此是一种天然的超级陀螺罗盘。在 EPR 实验中之所以曾经耦合过的光子,在分开以后还会出现整体效应,这正是因为像陀螺罗盘在出发之前经调制一样,耦合过的光子,它们像经过调制的陀螺一样,离开地面的陀螺罗盘的方位测量,是跟它调制配对时的陀螺罗盘的方向测量一致的,因此在 EPR 测量中,两者的量子效应是一样的。但这不能完全说明潘建伟、郭光灿教授那类完全无线通讯的空地、星地量子通信的量子纠缠。这使笔者想起了李后强先生的分形分维研究。因为分形也包含有由虚化实的另一类量子纠缠的无中生。

李后强,重庆市云阳县人,1962 年 8 月生。笔者认识他,25 岁的李后强还是川大化学系的研究生,他就类似把弦膜圈说和分形研究结合起来,向高专业的化学进军,给中国弦膜圈说启示了应向专业化前进的方向。这是在 1987 年 6 月 9-14 日,全国全息生物学第四届学术讨论会在福州召开,他在大会作的建立生物全息律数学模型分形集的报告,根据张颖清发现的穴位分布全息律,采用三分康托尔集:一条线段分成三等分,舍去中间的一段;按这种办法把余下的两段继续下去,其极限的情况就是康托尔集,它的分维数约为0.6309;李后强以此作研究人体经络穴位分形的数学方法,计算出穴位分布分维值D≈0.631,结论为人体穴位是沿着若干条,对应拓扑维数为零的点和对应拓扑维数为1 的线之间的复杂途径而分布的。生物体是由分属于不同级并且具有不同分化程度的全息元组成,具有全息性的生物体是分形体,树的生长及形状也具有分形性,毛细血管和癌细胞的扩散的分形度D=1.68(二维);2.50(三维)。这不是在把类似弦膜圈说的弦线和分形研究结合起来吗?这行吗?笔者向他请教,人体经络穴位与弦线中间间断相去甚远,这种数学方法进攻的方向是什么?李后强说,这最大的好处,是康托尔集能给人体经络穴位一个定量的具体数值。这是专业科学家追求的一个方向。并说他早就知道笔者。原来李后强在川大化学系读研究生时的导师是郑老师。郑老师的爱人尧汝英老师在《大自然探索》杂志作责任编辑。《大自然探索》杂志在四川创刊后,笔者在盐亭县科协每年都要向《大自然探索》杂志投很多次稿,而不管他们登不登,这在他们编辑部内成为笑话。

笔者这种堂吉诃德式的精神,首先应该感谢张颖清先生能公开发表生物全息律的突破,使笔者继后 1982 年也能在北京公开出版的正式刊物《潜科学杂志》第 3 期上,发表《自然全息律》。该文也是我国第一次公开报道弦膜圈说的线旋研究和宇宙自旋网络碰撞研究的文献。然而这之先,笔者追求自然全息弦膜圈说的发表,近 20 年不得成功,才从大城市又转回农村。就在这 1982 年,张颖清在当时著名的我国高级科普刊物《自然杂志》第四期上,长篇发表了《生物全息律》,影响顿时轰动全国。笔者那时刚调到盐亭县科协工作不久,得知这个消息后,笔者冒昧给张颖清写了一封信,建议他申请筹备召开全国生物全息律学术讨论会,并说明这应与内蒙古自治区科协联系。1983 年 9 月 16-20 日首届全国生物全息律学术研讨会在内蒙古集宁市召开,张颖清对笔者说,这正是他采纳的结果。在大会上笔者宣读了《生物全息律是开创我国科学未来的先声》的论文,其中就提到分形与生物全息的联系,但并没有深入下去。

事情的复杂还有源于 1974 年,王国雄先生帮助打印《前夸克类圈体模型能改变前夸克粒子模型的手征性和对称破缺》失败后,18 冶公司宣传处宣传科科长柴志良老师建议笔者,改写成科幻小说的形式,在其中

阐述自己的弦膜圈说研究。笔者照办了,写出《研究生遇爱因斯坦记》的科学小说,其中写了主人公中学时代,从舞台幕布的分开、对撞,自然全息到圈子的结耦结网成宇宙的自旋网络;主人公的这种类似弦膜圈说的宇宙幕布的撕裂分开、对撞的研究,在文章投寄给成都创办的《科学文艺》后,最后被主编封杀。所以当笔者 1981 年到盐亭县科协后,就积极支持盐亭县科协主办《科学盐亭人》铅印科普小报,并在该报发表了《研究生遇爱因斯坦记》的前半部分。《科学盐亭人》被人指责"刊名不通",不准办后。1982 年 1 月又积极支持盐亭县科协主办《科学知识》铅印科普小报,该报先后发表了叶眺新的《生物全息律和自然全息律》、《圈态密码和物质心脏的夸克》等短文。北京《潜科学杂志》1982 年第 3 期发表的《自然全息律》,正是盐亭县科协铅印小报《生物全息律和自然全息律》一文改为《自然全息律》的转发。而能发表,正是因为当时是我国张颖清生物全息律热的时候,夹带的量子圈态新概念才得以成功。

由于有这些经历,所以笔者向《大自然探索》投稿,也就比较随便。由于稿子太多,尧汝英老师也请她爱人的研究生李后强等帮助审稿。在福州的见面,李后强知道笔者的情况后,建议向分形专业化研究的先驱曼德尔布罗特学习,走的弦膜圈说专业化的道路。他以自己的化学专业举例说,高分子能生成凝胶,给化工生产带来困难。因此,预测凝胶点,控制凝胶的生成,是高分子学家们奋斗了多年的目标。然而,在70年代中期以前都未完成此使命。但70年代后期诞生的标度律和分形理论,为重新认识高分子开辟了一条金光大道。后来笔者才知道,当时李后强已经开始在探索把分形理论引进化学专业酶和蛋白质表面分维的计算中。李后强实际是个在化学领域运用弦膜圈说的大家。他虽比笔者小17岁,且比笔者接触分形理论晚。但正是从这时起,在与李后强的交流和帮助下,在积累了近30年弦膜圈说研究的基础上,笔者的研究才进入专业弦膜圈说的快车道。

1、用李后强的三分康托尔集与人体经络穴位联系的分形数学方法,推证沈致远的量子纠缠超光速量子隐形传态中的虚与实。量子纠缠或量子缠结,与虚实相间的分形的自相似性原理有等价联系。不说 1967 年曼德尔布罗特在美国《科学》杂志上发表"英国的海岸线有多长?",首创揭开分形"无中生有"的答案,即海岸线弯弯曲曲的长度的不确定性,与分解到分子、原子的尺度,所测得的实际长度类似天文数字的无穷大,实际体现的是类似超光速反冲量子辐射或喷注信息的隐形传输。这种"虚"的隐形传输的"物质"基础,就联系类似三分康托尔集,被抛弃的中间那段弦线,或那段间断空间的自相似性的反演。

人们常说的"心有灵犀一点通",这也类似有超光速隐形传输一样。即类似当此时的谈话。或触景生情的实路线,接通了彼时类似康托尔集中被抛弃的间断空间的自相似性反演路线,或许就心有灵犀一点通了。这里,彼时先前的三分康托尔集的基础"长度"的弦线,实际决定了这种超光速隐形传输的谱线或频谱。众所周知,三分康托尔集合的作图是,取一个线段的一段,将它分割为三等分,舍弃中间的一段,余下左右端的两段。如果把它看成弦膜圈说的弦演化,"显"的是继续将余下的两段重复以上步骤时,又得到 4 个线段,如果一步步地继续下去,其极限的情况就是康托尔集合。按分形自相似公式计算它的维数,可以设康托集合的源多边形长度为 1,生成元为长度各为 1/3 的左右两端弦线。则有D=ln2/ln3=0.6309•••。这也是前面李后强说人体经络穴位的分形维数定量数值。这种无穷多个分散的点状的类似圆锥体辐射分布的极限情况的康托尔集合,显然和我们看到的人体形状是不同的。那么,康托尔集"隐"的是什么呢?

这要想通那舍弃中间的一段"空缺点",也是圆锥体辐射分布的时间反演,即人体形状实际是和这种"空缺点"时间反演分布的压缩合成体等价的。而康托尔集各种的源多边形基础弦线,构成的谱线或频谱,也许就包含映射了各个人种、民族、地区、集团、家族、血缘等的谱线或频谱。其次,康托尔集分形的演示,对应的是 1 维的弦线,也可以对应 0 维的弦线。三旋在 0 维的映射,除中性的点外,或是一个阴性的点,或是一种阳性的点。将此抽象放大,如果是一个阴性的点,类似在纸上用针扎一个小孔,放大这种图象,并取这个孔眼的剖面,它类似一条线段舍弃了中间的一段。如果拿来映射对应康托尔集合,即使由中性点组成的物体,这种"空缺点"的时间反演的压缩合成体中,这样的圆锥体辐射分布的点有无穷多个,这正是所有量子纠缠超光速量子隐形传态虚与实路线的秘密。

2、1988年李后强在川大化学系完成研究生学业,再读川大化学系著名教授赵华明老师的博士研究生。1989年李后强作为组委会秘书,全力参与打造7月13-16日在成都召开的第一届全国分形理论及应用研讨会和在四川大学出版社出版的《分形理论及其应用》的论文集。1990年李后强出版了他的第一本学术专著《分形与分维》一书。1992年他被破格晋升为四川大学教授。同年8月18日《光明日报》头版,报道《李后强解决四大著名难题---在用分形理论研究酶结构方面领先世界》。李后强在四川作为分形研究的领军人物,明的是把分形引入化学物理,暗的则是只做不说地把弦膜圈说引入化学物理。例如在大分子科学相关领域中的一些分形理论应用,他说,大分子链可视为由链段构成,而链段又由链节构成。链段本身受溶剂、温度等的影响,其大小、形态随时发生着变化。根据分形理论,大分子链有很好的自相似性,其形态可由分数维(D)

来描述。通常求算D值很困难,特别是复杂的大分子。但他给出了酶、核酸和蛋白质等表面分维计算D值的一种简便方法。这是从数学上描述大分子的空间构象。类似酶和蛋白质的大分子链,无论链线弯曲、封闭等类似丝卷的无规行走,或"树近似"的凝胶渗流等,如能找出局部链节或链段聚合标度,以此形态和整链形态缩影作比较判断,可分为线型链、支化链和网状链等具有明显的简单的分形特征。

沿着这种暗的弦膜圈说思路,能回采酶动力学的本质及其计算问题,也能梳理量子力学或粒子物理学的自旋和自旋网络问题。这里简单的对应特征是,酶动力学大分子链局部的链节或链段聚合标度,分为的线型链、支化链和网状链等,作的分形生成元,也可在拓扑结构的类圈体上,选定一点来标记它的自旋轨迹,进而求出单粒子的类圈体线旋、面旋、体旋各类的行走轨迹路线,作自旋分形形态特征分类的生成元。这各自类似丝卷的曲线形态缩影,为量子场论和多粒子行走整体形态缩影的自旋网络或自旋,提供了一般性的类似变分法和分形理论相结合的数值描述或计算基础。这比纽结理论研究量子场论自旋网络,提供了一种更简便计算的方法。

反之,结合 1984 年以来类似美国数学家琼斯把纽结理论与统计力学相联系,建立的一套计算纽结和纽结链的方法,发展弦膜圈说,能将某些场的能相图变为形相图来作分形 D 值计算,也能将形相图改为对能相图来作分形 D 值计算。

具体的道理也类上:一个物体作平动,取其一标记点的轨迹,可以看成一条流线,能与一条未打结的绳线对应;自旋一周则与未打结的绳圈结对应。用这种思想处理类圈体三旋的 62 种自旋状态,单动态是未打结的环或封闭线的纽结结构;双动态和多动态是不只一个环的纽结结构。纽结可以用二维图(平面图)和琼斯多项式,即纽结不变式来描述。琼斯方法的特点是,可从能量函数的角度处理纽结不变式在拓扑量子场论中的推广。但这类纽结理论更多地是从纯数学上运用自旋,因此三旋的渗透能更好地体现其真实的物理意义。例如把三旋的 62 种自旋态对应的纽结,可以看成是简单纽结或基本纽结。它们是各种能相或形相纽结图的62 种生成元。因为即使在混沌的能相轨迹图中,也能分离这类生成元。

最有意思的是,拉长一个立方体并把它的上下表面、左右表面、前后表面胶合到一起的轨迹拓扑的三流形环面,它类似克莱因瓶;可用琼斯多项式的类似纽结来表达,它映射的正是面旋、体旋与不平凡线旋结合的多动态。因此三旋的 62 种自旋态是 62 种纽结生成元,而且只是三旋的一个循环周期。它只能类似量子场局域的一些小系统;量子场全域的大系统则类似纽结的更普遍型式如纽结链。纽结链与纽结的关系类似纽结的网连。把一个场看作是定义在离散网格上的一系列场在离散网络的间隔趋于零的极限情形,那么二维纽结自旋模型的连续极限就是一维量子场论。各种各样的纽结具有许多应用,但很多纽结是人工形成的,所以自然产生的纽结就有新的意义。例如联系手工用针线缝补衣物,常会自然产生线打结的现象。这可以近似看作是在以无穷远点为端点的线上的纽结,它丰富了类似单线单结,单线变为多线单结、多线多结、单线多结等纽结内容,也揭示了其中隐含三旋隐秩序。其次也联系混沌、孤波、分形、量子起伏、纤维丛、时空、小孔成像、多元多极对立统一等现象的认知。

3、化学专业的弦膜圈说回采。化学反应是旧化学键断裂、新化学键生成的过程。例如在所有气相分子反应中,新化合物的形成都是通过两个反应物之间的碰撞而达成的。每一个反应必须先经过一个"过渡态区域",在这个区域中,反应物分子中的旧化学键即将断裂、生成物分子中的新化学键即将生成。而所有的反应碰撞都是在特定的碰撞参数条件下,通过过渡态区域而进行的。这些特定的碰撞参数在量子力学中是一个"好量子数",因此在整个反应过程中是守恒的,这些特定的碰撞参数相当于反应体系特定的转动量子态,一般被称为"分波"。由于反应过渡态寿命非常短(飞秒量级,1飞秒等于10的-15次方秒),分波一般在能量上很宽且重叠在一起,因此很难在实验室观测到单个分波的结构。在绝大多数情况下,即使完全量子态分辨的交叉束实验测量的微分截面也是不同分波叠加后的平均值,因此,观测单个特定的分波结构是动力学研究领域的一个极大挑战。但据报道,如今中国科学院大连化学物理研究所杨学明研究小组,通过设计一个世界上最高分辨率的交叉分子束散射实验,首次观察到了化学反应中的这种分波共振——转动量子态为12、13、14的反应共振态分波所引起的3个振荡峰,三维图类似圆盘生日王冠蛋糕,王冠上面的三个锯齿峰,正是观测到的三个振荡峰。分波共振的这个实验事实,也能联系 14 年前,笔者发表在《延边大学学报(自然科学版)》1996 年第2期上的论文《共轭多烯电环合反应的三旋规律》的推论。其中也凸显了弦膜圈说的奥秘。这处回采,正是李后强老师最先作的建议。

这说来话长。在 1987 年福州的全息生物会上,笔者在大会上宣读了用弦膜圈说写的论文《环境与基因》,其中的类圈体三旋给李后强留下了印象。回川后,在李后强的推荐下,《四川大学报》1988 年 10 月 8 日发表了笔者写的《诞生在中国的三旋坐标学说》的短文。这是表达最开始的自主知识产权弦膜圈说,是类圈体的三种自旋的发现。与李后强的讨论中,笔者也说明三旋坐标与分形、自然全息等,都有等价之处。但李后

强认为,"三旋坐标"这个概念,从英文翻译,传播区分上说都不好,而统一用"三旋理论"更好。1989年一开春,李后强就来信告诉笔者,为了在川内学术界把"三旋理论"这个名称打出来,并在川内正式学术出版物上发表,下半年成都要召开第一届全国分形理论及应用研讨会,组委会对论文审查很严,希望笔者认真准备论文,这是一个受专业考验的机会。

当然这也是李后强先生出的一道难题。把三旋弦膜圈说与分形结合,当然也是笔者和李后强认识后一直在学习、思考的问题,幸好这时找到一个经典范例的突破口:吃烟吐烟圈,如同滴一点蓝墨水在碗里的水中,形成的墨水线旋圈,甚至类似现在的冰岛艾雅法拉火山,一月中也能喷出一个在空中可观测到的蒸汽圈,这是蒸汽和气体喷发物从狭窄的火山喷发口喷出时所形成的,就好似从吸烟者嘴中吐出的烟圈一样。联系宇宙大爆炸,会不会也类似吐烟圈式的暴胀来完成的呢?

专业科学家最重视数学模型和公式计算,笔者想到李后强先生也是这样。于是把暴涨宇宙论和宇宙大爆炸论看成是同一件事情的前后两个不同侧重点。因为按照圈态结耦分形的自相似,三个圈才能形成一个新圈。暴涨宇宙的基圆的圆圈,必须要有适当大尺度的半径,这正是由类似吐烟圈式的暴胀来完成的。而吐烟圈的类似演示,这也是一种分形的自相似嵌套结构:例如滴一滴墨水在水中,这立即会形成一个墨水线旋环,但这线旋环不久会变成几个较小的线旋环,如此这样不断分裂下去,类比宇宙的相变,是按类似墨水线旋环的方式由时空点的量子环圈来结耦、结网的。那么如果基圆的圆圈太小,就只能形成轻子、强子、原子核、原子、分子等一类微观粒子。正是由暴胀形成了基圆的大圆圈,宇宙弦圈结耦、结网才在一个新的基点上进行演化。

其次,三旋弦圈联络结耦的支付选择,也是一种起伏变化。因此说,暴胀起伏模型和宇宙弦模型都能用三旋圈态结耦的分形研究来综合;并且该分维图形还能具体地揭示大爆炸宇宙机制中过去未曾考察到的情况:即开始的爆炸不是象一个不断胀大的气球的表面那样爆炸,而是象吐烟圈式的爆炸,然后才象水中线旋环的奇异变化一样,所有的物质粒子才开始互相远离,即宇宙在三维方向才开始作扩张,但同时又还有物质粒子向中心区域集聚,形成明显的等级式成团结构的现象。原子有中心,太阳系有中心,银河系有中心……就是这种等级现象的明证。即三旋大爆炸宇宙的分维分析,能形象地对宇宙膨胀作出说明。于是笔者根据分形曲线的分数维数定义:D=lgN/lg(1/r);推论计算得出宇宙起源圈态结耦分形的 D=1.26179。令人惊奇的是,这个圈态结耦分形的维数值,与国内外一些天文学家研究宇宙的分形结构,测得的星系分布的分形维数约为1.2 相近似。新的天文观测因揭示出宇宙中一些引人注目的、未曾预料到的结构,如宇宙中巨大的空洞和星系链,某些星系分布的"片"状结构是显而易见的----这就是所谓的"不平等的宇宙"。目前解释不平等的宇宙起源的有暴胀起伏模型和宇宙弦模型。而通过三旋圈态结耦分形的维数计算,证明这两种模型实际是等价的。

笔者以此内容写出了《三旋理论与分形、分维》的论文,提交大会,并在 1989 年四川大学出版社出版的《分形理论及其应用》的论文集中发表。据说该论文在大会组委会审查讨论时,争论很大,但因组委会中有著名分形学家文志英教授、李后强博士等年轻科学家们的支持,终于得以通过。

这次学术讨论会后,李后强先生对笔者又提出一个更高的要求。他说,如果弦膜圈三旋理论是成立的,那么必须对科学史上一些重大的公认的科学理论进行回采,说得通过得去的才算数。他对其他的专业不太了解,但他对他的博士导师、川大著名化学家赵华明教授研究的共轭多烯电环合反应的顺旋和对旋是了解的,这是属于著名的分子前线轨道理论问题。在化学中顺旋和对旋与三旋是什么关系?具体如何表达?这篇论文写好了,如能把他说服,他会推荐去发表。他甚至说,他之所以要考赵华明教授的博士研究生,就是因为赵华明教授在这方面的造诣很深。赵华明教授在美国留学时,就向美国化学家伍德沃德学习;伍德沃德因合成甾醇和叶绿素等有机化合物的贡献,获 1965 年诺贝尔化学奖。

1965 年伍德沃德与霍夫曼共同提出了分子轨道对称守恒原理; 霍夫曼因提出分子轨道对称守恒原理而与福井谦一共同获得了 1981 年诺贝尔化学奖。也就从 50-60 年代开始,赵华明教授在有限物质条件下从事"分子轨道"及"物理有机"方面的研究,用分子轨道法处理芳香过渡态----用分子轨道理论证明了对称守恒原理与芳香过渡态理论的一致性。分子轨道对称守恒原理在共轭多烯电环合反应中有一个重要应用,就是认为,反应物的分子轨道应按对称守恒的方式转化为产物的分子轨道,当反应物与产物的轨道对称性相合时反应易于发生,而不相合时反应就难于发生; 其中有一个难题是,以直链共轭烯烃两端的碳原子在一定条件下相联而变成环状分子的电环合反应,所得到的产物都具有立体专一性为例,如实验发现共轭己三烯两端有取代基 R 时,在加热条件下闭环只得到对旋产物,这时两个 R 在环的同侧; 但在光照条件下闭环又只能得到顺旋产物,这时两个 R 分布在环的异侧。这里的"对旋"和"顺旋"规律,虽然能用日本学者福井谦一的前线轨道理论得到解释,但如果弦膜圈说类圈体三旋理论,也能给予正确解释,这种对比就更能证明弦膜圈

说的三旋理论的能力。因为三旋理论既然是专门研究类圈体的自旋,那么对旋和顺旋应该是它的题中之议。 笔者和李后强先生的交往,既不像学生时代,与赵本旭老师是一个孤点的见面;也不像才走上社会,与 王国雄老师是一段长时间里的较常的见面。由于大家的工作已较定型,作为民间的业余科学爱好研究,纯粹 是一种义工劳动,一种对大自然的客观规律、万物的起因、宇宙的奥秘等认识的痴迷,对实践空间-时间、 量子-引力与宇宙理论的发展和变革的追求。而李后强先生在大学,虽算是一个专业分工的科学家,但是他 对笔者的引导,是没有任何的报酬和任务的,也是纯粹是一种义工劳动。所以那时我们每年只有一两次的见 面,有的还是因工作的顺便。所以,当李后强提议应解答化学里的顺旋与对旋现象后,他没有再说什么;笔 者也既没有问他要看些什么书,也没有问他完不成下一步如何办?化学不是笔者学的专业,虽然在大学里自 学过量子化学,那只是一种泛泛的了解,实际只有高中学过的有机化学知识。但在接下来的时间里,笔者还 是先后买来了《量子化学》、《结构化学》、《物质结构》、《量子生物学》等书来业余自学。

几年自学时间过去,笔者终于有了收获:三旋弦膜圈说参加到有机化合分子的最简单的一段共轭多烯电环合反应中去,反应物分子中的旧化学键即将断裂、生成物分子中的新化学键即将生成的"过渡态区域",被称为"分波";这个反应过渡态的寿命是非常短的,它的特定的碰撞参数相当于反应体系特定的转动量子态,要认识的关键,是它的多层次动态定位性:①共轭多烯电环合反应,从一根直链变到一条圈链,直链两端以及中间的碳原子决不是很顺从地规则卷曲合拢的。它们之间的布朗运动,和自身的面旋转动、体旋翻动相比,后者更容易简化定位。②以上的各类运动,以及键长、键角在平衡位置的变化,把它们推到极端而又要照顾到相互间的协调,能反映微观分子运动的这种极端而又协调结果的莫过于趋圆性。

三旋对应的多粒子正多边形映射,取的正是这一瞬间的情况。把多烯分子追溯到强子、轻子、夸克、前夸克等层次的圈态群落态,会出现多圈链的纽结状。1987年日本数学家福原提出:假定一个纽结是由一条一定长度的柔软的线首尾相接而形成的,这条线上带有分布均匀的同种静电荷;根据同性相斥的原理,纽结的任何一部分都会尽量远离其相邻部分,从而使得纽结的总静电势能达到最小。这个最小能量就是纽结的一个不变量。1991年,日本数学家证明了:纽结越复杂,其最小能量就越大,而且对于任一给定的数值,能量不大于此数值的本质上不同的纽结只有有限多个,1993年美国数学家史蒂夫·布赖森等又证明:最简单的纽结,也就是说能量最小的纽结,确是人们所预期的普通圆圈。这从另一方面说明节点正多边形反映的是趋向理想瞬间的分子轨道能级圆周。所以我们用碳链圈的体旋和面旋的实转与空转,能简便、迅速、具体地判断共轭多烯在加热或光照条件下进行电环合反应的顺旋、对旋规律。其次,类似物质、时空、宇宙等的卡西米尔效应(类似膜圈)和能量隧道效应(类似膜圈)的缠结,也说明了为什么球量子和环量子是共存的。即球量子类似是对应卡西米尔效应,环量子类似是对应能量隧道效应。所以我们也可以把超弦理论、超膜理论和圈量子理论统一起来。即大尺度结构的无标度性实在,和小尺度结构的无标度性实在,也能够统一。这就是 1996年,笔者在《延边大学学报(自》》第2期发表的《共轭多烯电环合反应的三旋联系》论文背后的故事。

2010年,是笔者完成弦膜圈说专业化约70万字的《三旋理论初探》书稿的10周年,该书渗透了笔者弦膜圈说近40年探索的艰难历程。最终也是在李后强先生的支持、帮助、策划下,由四川科学技术出版社2002年5月才得以出版发行。这里以此文说明我国民间科学,为什么近50年间能跟上国际前沿科学主流弦膜圈说不断飞速前进的步伐,并藉此感谢我国科学殿堂内、外,像赵本旭、王国雄、李后强等等支持、帮助过的老师、朋友、同志、领导和亲人。

#### 参考文献

- [1] 李后强, 陈光钺, 分形与分维, 四川教育出版社, 暴永宁译, 1990年9月;
- [2] 叶眺新, 隐秩序和全息论, 自然信息, 1985年第3期;
- [3][英]罗杰·彭罗斯,通往实在之路,湖南科学技术出版社,王文浩译,2008年6月;
- [4] [英]S·W·霍金, [南非]G·F·R·埃利斯, 时空的大尺度结构, 湖南科学技术出版社, 王文浩译, 2006 年 6 月;
- [5] 王德奎, 三旋理论初探, 四川科学技术出版社, 2002年5月;
- [6] 孔少峰、王德奎,求衡论---庞加莱猜想应用,四川科学技术出版社, 2007年9月;
- [7] 王德奎,解读《时间简史》,天津古籍出版社,2003年9月;
- [8] 薛晓舟,量子真空物理导引,科学出版社,2005年8月;
- [9][美]保罗·哈尔彭,伟大的超越,湖南科技出版社,刘政译,2008年4月;
- [10][美]L·斯莫林,物理学的困惑,湖南科技出版社,李泳译,2008年4月:
- [11][美]斯蒂芬·韦伯,看不见的世界,湖南科学技术出版社,胡俊伟译,2007年12月:
- [12] 刘月生、王德奎等,"信息范型与观控相对界"研究专集,河池学院学报 2008 年增刊第一期,2008 年 5 月;
- [13] 叶眺新,中国气功思维学,延边大学出版社,1990年5月;
- [14] [英]安德鲁•华生,量子夸克,湖南科技出版社,刘健等译,2008年4月;
- [15] [美]M·克莱因,数学:确定性的丧失,湖南科学技术出版社,李宏魁译,2004年2月。

6/25/2010

# The Anatomy of Earth (Global Warming) Earth's Orbit around the Sun is Decaying

Willie McDonald cdnld30@gmail.com

Abstract: Global warming can be reversed, if action is taken in time. If its not reversed in time the sun's heat will dominate this planet's weather, and generate unusual weather patterns to the point where the only thing left to eat will be other people (cannibalism). Criminal activity will promote, disorder will rule (robbery, rape, murder, etc.) The real reason for global warming is the earth's orbit around the sun is decaying, in other words the earth is moving closer to the sun. The earth is a planet that functions like a machine. Like cars, trucks, aircrafts, or rockets. The earth has a fuel system (crude oil/ methane gas wells), an engine system (the core), exhaust system (volcanoes), and a cooling system (the oceans). A car's engine system generates torque, an aircraft's engine system generates thrust, and the earth's engine system generates a powerful magnetic field.

[Willie McDonald. The Anatomy of Earth (Global Warming), Earth's Orbit around the Sun is Decaying. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):47-48]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: Earth; Global Warming; Earth's Orbit; Sun; Decaying

People take the earth's magnetic field for granted, because its invisible, and silent, but the earth's magnetic field protects all life on the surface of this planet, and beneath the oceans from the sun. The magnetic field performs several other functions. The magnetic field holds this planet together, and holds life, objects, and the ocean to the surface of this planet, it retains the air we breathe, and keep it from escaping into space, it protects life on this planet from sun flares, deadly radiation, and from poisonous gases, it acts as a force shield, and its responsible for thunder storms, hurricanes, tornadoes, and blizzards

The earth acts as a generator's armature, it rotates at one thousand miles per hour, its magnetic field brushes against the magnetic field of the surrounding universe, and electricity is generated, just like in a common generator. This energy is trapped in earth's atmosphere, where it gathers moisture from the atmosphere, and forms thunder storms, tornadoes, hurricanes, snow storms, etc. These are all electromagnetic phenomena.

The earth's magnetic field also, keeps the earth at a safe distance from the sun, and the molten core of the earth is the engine, that generates the magnetic field. The earth's fuel system is referred to as oil wells/ crude oil reservoirs. They are actually self pressurizing fuel cells. Like any machine, if you were to shut off fuel to the engine, the engine will stop operating. The oil company's crude oil extraction process compromises the earth's fuel system, and shut off fuel to the earth's engine (the core), by releasing pressure out of the earth's fuel system (oil wells). Normally the pressure in a crude

oil well/ reservoir is tens of thousands to hundreds of thousands of pounds per square inch.

These oil wells are located all around the planet for even heating of the core, uneven heating of the core will result in a shift in the earth's axle.

Under normal circumstance the core (the engine) stays at a constant 5000 to 7000 degrees celsius, and that's hot enough to melt steel, and the pressure in the core is tens of thousands to hundreds of pounds per square inch. The oil is ignited long before it reaches the core, and enters the core as flames, and/ or heat. Crude oil, and its components are called hydrocarbons, and are capable of generating the temperatures, and pressures found in the core, and mantle, and in oil wells. Hydrocarbons are used to melt, and manufacture steel. The higher the temperature in the core, and the stronger the earth's magnetic field. The cooler the temperature in the core, and the weaker the earth's magnetic field. The earth's engine is being fuel starved, and it is slowly cooling. As the core cools the earth's magnetic field weakens, and the earth is being pulled closer to the sun.

Global warming has nothing to do with green house gases (Co2), holes in the ozone, CFC, R-12 refrigerant, the sun going nova, aerosol propellant, methane gases, or the earth going through a cycle, etc. Hydrocarbons such as coal are safe to use, its crude oil/ methane gas that should be left alone. If Co2 gases are responsible for global warming, why are there no reports of a spike in global temperature in the early twentieth century, during the industrial

revaluation in America, and Europe? WARNING: Ridding the air of green house gases will not reverse global warming. This is not a cycle the earth is going through. This is a man made catastrophe in the making.

The only way to reverse global warming is for the oil companies to re-pressurize the earth's fuel systems (crude oil/ methane gas wells). One way this can be accomplished, by igniting the methane gas in the fuel cell (oil/ gas well). The ignited gas will expand, and create the pressure need to force the remaining crude oil (fuel) into the core. This is the real cause for global warming, and the only way it can be reversed. It must be understood crude oil, and methane gas was not created to fuel our industries, or automobiles. It was created to fuel this planet.

Volcanoes are the earth's exhaust system, and was designed to rid the core (the earth's engine) of spent fuel, debris, and they regulate the pressure in the core, which is generated by the combustion of crude oil / methane gas. The pressure that's release from volcanoes are provided by dioxide, nitrogen, sulphur, dioxide, carbon monoxide, and the facts are these are all crude oil by-product, including the pressure.

These gases, and the pressure proves beyond a shadow of doubt, hydrocarbons are being burned in the core of this planet, and lots of it. The materials ejected from volcanoes originate from the earth's core. Volcanic eruptions in the pass were stronger, than present day eruptions. This is due to the core of this planet cooling. The more hydrocarbons that are burned in the core, the higher the core's temperature, and the stronger, and more frequent volcanic eruptions will occur. Green house gases are not responsible for global warming, it goes beyond green house gases. Something is going wrong with the earth itself, and its obit around the sun is changing, and not for the better.

- 1. The earth is moving away from the moon at 4 centimeters each year.
- 2. A total of 24 leap seconds have been added to the atomic clock over the decades, because the earth's rotation is slowing down. Many scientists believe the hours of the day will increase from 24 to 25 hours in a day.
- 3. 12 noon use to be the hottest part of the day, now it 3 o'clock in the after noon, due to the earth shifting on it's axis by 26 degrees, and the earth is wobbling

on it axis. Many astrophysicists believe the earth will eventually flip upside down.

- 4. NASA scientists have discovered that the earth has developed a breach in its magnetic field.
- 5. The winters are getting sunnier, and warmer from the equator (latitude- zero) to (latitude 29 degrees-N, and S) in winter.
- 6. The polar ice caps are being melted, one at a time, during each polar ice cap's summer season, and the oceans are rising, due to the melting ice.
- 7. Floods, and tornadoes are developing in winter, from (latitude 25.0 degrees-North, and South) to (latitude 37. 0 degrees North, and South), and there shouldn't be enough sun rays, and heat for the green house gas theory to be applicable.
- 8. The same weather is occurring in the southern hemisphere from (latitude- zero to 42-S) in winter.
- 9. It's getting noticeably hotter every 15 to 20 years.
- 10. Hundreds of scientists believe the green house gas theory is wrong.

Most of what I've written in the last two paragraphs was written by scientist, geophysicists, geologists, astrophysicists, and can be found on the internet. The decay, and global warming are in the beginning stages, the worse has yet to come. Don't be confused by the fluctuation in weather (temperature) from year to year. Instead, focus on on this planet is rising, and so are the oceans. Global warming has to be measured by the decades. Earth's orbit around the sun will decay very slowly. Hundreds of scientist disagree with the green house gas theory, because it makes no sense.

# Written by:

Willie McDonald (July-1983)

cdnld30@gmail.com

 $http://the true reasons for global warming.blog spot.com \\ 1-832-891-2865$ 

7/12/2010

# Analysis of the influence of community based organizations on community development in Rivers State, Nigeria

Onyeozu, A.M

Department of adult and Non Formal Education
University of port harcourt
omadesope@yahoo.co.uk

Abstract: The study focused on analysis of political influence of community based organizations on community development in Rivers State, Nigeria. Data was collected with the aid of structured questionnaire from 960 randomly selected respondents in the study area and analysed using descriptive statistics. Findings revealed that the activities of community based organizations in Rivers State include building of market stalls, provision and servicing of boreholes, building and renovation of town halls, maintenance of community roads, provision of furniture and equipment to schools. The study also concludes that the activities of community based organizations influence respondents both physically and politically which are good development. Based on the findings of the study, the following recommendations were made: increased awareness at the community level on the formation of community based organizations. Such awareness campaigns should be carried out by the opinion leaders in the communities and the campaign should highlight the benefits open to individuals and members of associations and the communities both locally and internationally. Community Based Organizations should seek for ways of partnering with all the tiers of government for development projects in rural communities. Government should encourage community based organizations by supporting their developmental efforts or by subvention.

[Onyeozu, A.M. Analysis of the influence of community based organizations on community development in Rivers

Key words: political influence, community based organizations

State, Nigeria Academia Arena 2010;2(10):49-53]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

#### 1. Introduction

Self help projects undertaken through voluntary efforts and the active participation of individuals and corporate groups in communities constitutes an important nucleus in grassroots development. This process involves organizing community members for identification of their needs, plan; and for action to meet these needs with maximum reliance on their initiative and resources. with or without the assistance of government or non-governmental organizations (NGOs). According to Dike (1979) the growth and development of a town is mainly a reflection of the population growth, location of industries. specialization and organization of the inhabitants of the community. In Nigeria most people believe that it is the responsibility of the government and its functionaries to provide for the needs of the communities. It was maintained that government could, and should develop communities, provide basic infrastructure, social and physical amenities.

Though the government is seen by some as a greater provider with unlimited resources, Sociologists and development experts see collective efforts and self help as inevitable tool in community development. From the primitive stage of man's existence to the time of civilization, development has always stemmed from the coming together of people

or groups for the common interest of members. Grouping for mutual help and improvement of lives of community members has been accepted as a strategy of community development. Ekpeyong (1993) affirms that affiliation creates passion, shapes behavior and induces action. We make effort to live but we need the support of others to improve. As infants born into the world cannot survive without the support and assistance of adults, in the same vein, some communities cannot improve on their living conditions without the effort and assistance of other people and corporate groups in the communities. Okodudu (1998) argues that the failure of government in their traditional role of developing rural communities to enjoy developmental facilities gave rise to social institution and organization aimed at mobilizing local resources for the provision of the amenities with the cooperation of other agencies like the non governmental agencies (NGOs). The collection of these social institution and organization is what is referred to as community-based organizations (CBOs). In Nigeria, community-based organizations include town unions, associations, age grades, social clubs, credit groups committee of friends etc. Community-based organizations are those organizations within the communities which come together for attainment of desired objectives in the interest of the group.

Adamu, Sodiya, Adeogun and Ogunbameru (2005) community based organizations provide mechanisms by which people relate with their environment. They also serve as forum where people come together to discuss their socio-economic problems and decide on strategies for bringing about desired changes.

development is Community recognized as an educational process in which groups of people, through the initiative and prompting of an internal or external leadership cadre, organize themselves, identify development priorities and determine their strategies for meeting the needs identified. Whether internally or externally induced, the role of leadership is central to the overall success of the process. The manner in which the peoples' needs are identified and their priorities determined, all depend to a large extent on the types of leadership which their community has (Anyanwu, 1982)

It is worthy of note that if the accomplishment of objectives requires collective efforts, human beings try to form associations designed to coordinate the activities of many individuals backed up by incentives, so that the objectives for which the associations are formed are achieved. As a matter of fact, society will cease to exist if members do not interact. This means that they must come together to give meaning to certain social phenomenon, establish a "commonness" with one another and develop a strong spirit or feeling of "we together" which implies a transfer of meaning and some level of mutual understanding. The feeling that the programme or project is "our work" adds advantage to the success of community-based organizations in community development.

Before the advent of the colonial administration in Nigeria, many communities had employed communal and self-help efforts as mechanism for mobilizing community resources for the provision of physical facilities in there areas through community based organization. In Rivers State, various clubs, unions, age grades, association and organization differ according to size and financial ability. The truth remains that no matter how small a self-help project is, it has the capacity of provoking further development. It triggers group competitions within communities and among the stakeholders in community development. In various part of Rivers state, women association, youth organizations, clubs and age grades have directly or indirectly influenced development activities in their area of operation. They have not only encouraged development activities, but have also embarked on development projects such as building of bus stop stands in places where people

stay in the sun or rain waiting for vehicles; market stalls, traffic control booths, classroom blocks and furniture for people in primary and secondary schools and so on. For instance in Aluu, a community in Ikwerre local government area of Rivers State, an association of women known as 'Alice' built a five-room apartment with toilet and bathroom for midwives and pregnant women in the area. At Rumueche, another community in Emohua local government area of Rivers State, an age group embarked on the renovation of the hall in the village wrestling (play) ground. Though the activities of community- based organizations may not be very elaborate is size, their impact on the development of communities has far reaching effect. It challenges wealthy men and even other non-governmental agencies to embark on similar development projects. According to Okodudu (1998), social clubs, cultural organization and cooperative societies (community-based organizations) are major actors in the community development scene. In most cases the work we do help others regardless of whether the work is paid for or not. Those who develop this selfless attitude to fellow men and to the nation do so under voluntary associations which the community- based organization share characteristics with. They are sometimes described as humanitarians or help agents; they render help to communities without seeking any rewards.

It has been empirically established that multinational companies and local governments contribute to grassroots development, but the contribution of community- based organization seem not to have attracted much scholarly attention. This neglect if continued will make the communities lose contribution of community based organization in grassroots development. In satisfying community needs, community based organization play prominent role in initiating programmes and project, mobilizing resources and educating the grass root populace. The influence of local indigenous actors in community development cannot be neglected. Local initiative stemming from the felt needs of the people remains very important in grass root development. This study therefore concerns itself with the influence of the activities of community based organization have on grassroots development in Rivers State, Nigeria.

Specifically the objectives of this study are to examine the activities of community based organization in grass root development in River state; determine the level of political influence of community based organizations on community members.

## 2. METHODOLOGY

#### 2.1 Research design

The research design employed in the study was descriptive survey design. This method is considered adequate in line with Cohen and March (1986) in Ofo (2001) who noted that this is a method of gathering data at a particular time with the intention of describing the nature of existing conditions; identifying standards against which existing conditions can be compared; determine relationship that exist between specific events.

## 2.2 Population and sample of Study

The study focused on all members of registered community based organizations in Rivers State as at February 2007. There were 650 women associations, 830 social clubs, 560 youth organizations, and 350 age grades, giving a total of 2, 400 registered community based organizations with a membership of 20, 000 as obtained from the Rivers State Ministry of Youth and Social Welfare.

Using simple random sampling technique, 1, 000 respondents were selected across the 9 local government areas involved in the study. However, 960 questionnaires were usable for the study. A four-point Likert Type rating scale of strongly agree, agree, disagree and strongly disagree was used to elicit information. Based on the data collected a midpoint of 2.50 was established and decision was reached thus: any mean score less than 2.50 suggest disagreement with the item, while any mean score equal to or greater than 2.50 suggest agreement with the item. Data collected were analysed using descriptive statistics.

Table 1 presents the analysis of the perception of the community members on the contribution of community based organizations. From the table, 93.85% of the respondents agreed that community based organizations in the area embark on building market. The building of market stalls in the area has helped inhabitants to keep their wares and reduce damage from flood and other weather conditions that hitherto affected them adversely. Also, 100% of the respondents agreed that CBOs in the area provided and helped to service boreholes. In many of the rural areas since there is no pipeborne water, they survive of water from borehole. All (100%) the respondents agreed that community based organizations in their communities build and renovate town halls. These halls were mostly used for town meetings and for vital ceremonies such as weddings, thanksgiving and so on. It was also found from the study that 47% of the respondents agreed that community based organizations maintain community roads. This, no doubt is a commendable feat from such CBOs. The study further revealed that 72.4% of the respondents agreed that CBOs in their area provide furniture and equipment to schools. The efforts identified in table 1 can be referred to as Social development efforts which Onveozu (2007) explained to be contribution by an individual or individuals in any form to collective output of services from which they will in turn receive services that enrich them materially, psychologically or otherwise. Similarly, Ihejirika (2007) emphasized that development projects requires the support based of grassroots organization such as the community based organizations.

Table 2 shows that the knowledge and experience gained in the governing of associations help members in community leadership and politics (mean =3.90). The implication of this is that social interactions as a result of participation in the endeavours of community based organizations create interest in community leadership and politics. This is obviously because responsibilities accrued from the organizations help them to handle higher responsibilities in the village political arena.

The findings of the study showed that respondents generally agreed that members of your club, organization or association had been good leaders in the community and outside. The mean score of 3.80 confirms this assertion which suggests that members observe their leaders and thereafter emulate the positive ingredients of leadership they observe. According to Adesope (2007) the five ingredients of leadership include initiative, intelligence, industry, influence and integrity. There is no doubt that the respondents have been influenced by the integrity of their leaders hence want to be like them. Also, findings from the study revealed that respondents' activities in club and association made them to be interested in leadership and politics. This clearly supports the meaning participation in group work. Oyebamiji and Adekola (2008) had observed that participation emphasizes total control by community members. It was noted that one of the merits of participation is that the involvement of people in development activities taking place in their communities is likely to result in better decisions.

## 3. Results and Discussion

# Analysis of contributions of CBOs as perceived by the community members

**Table 1:** contribution of (CBOs) as perceived by community members (n=960)

Items	Strongly	Agree	Disagree	Strongly	Mean
	agree			disagree	
Building market stalls	600	300	60	0	3.6
_	62.5%	31.35%	6.25%		
Provision and searching of bore holes	290	670	0	0	3.3
_	30.2%	69.8%			
Build and renovation of town halls	700	260	0	0	3.7
		27.1%			
Maintenance of community roads	30	430	500	0	3.5
•	3.1%	44.1%	52.1%		
Provision of furniture and equipment	200	650	110	0	3.1
to schools	20.3%	52.1%	11.5		

# 3.1 Political influence of community based organizations

# **Table 2: Political influence of CBOs**

S/N	Items	Mean score
1	The knowledge and experience gained in the governing of	3.90
	associations help members in community leadership and	
	politics	
2	Members of your club, organization or association had been	3.80
	good leaders in the community and outside	
3	Your activities in your club and association made you be	2.90
	interested in leadership and politics	

# 4. Conclusion and Recommendations

The study concludes that the activities of community based organizations in Rivers State include building of market stalls, provision and servicing of boreholes, building and renovation of town halls, maintenance of community roads, provision of furniture and equipment to schools. The study also concludes that the activities of community based organizations influence respondents physically and politically which are good indices for development. Based on the findings of the study following the recommendations were made:

- Increased awareness at the community level on the formation of community based organizations. Such awareness campaigns should be carried out by the opinion leaders in the communities and the campaign should highlight the benefits open to individuals and members of associations and the communities both locally and internationally.
- 2. Community Based Organizations should seek for ways of partnering with all the tiers of government for development projects in rural communities.

3. Government should encourage community based organizations by supporting their developmental efforts or by subvention.

Correspondence to:

Dr. Onyeozu, A.M
Department of Adult and Non-Formal
Education
University of Port Harcourt
omadesope@yahoo.co.uk

# References

- [1] Dike, V. (1979) Leadership, democracy and the Nigerian economy: lessons from the past and directions for the future, Nigeria: Sacramento the lighting press
- [2] Ekpeyong, S. (1973) Elements of sociology. Ikoyi, Lagos, Africa Heritage Publications.
- [3] Adamu, C.O.., Sodiya, C.I., Adeogun, M.O. and Ogunbameru, O.O. (2005) Assessment of the activities of community based organizations in the development of Ifo local government area of Ogun State, Nigeria. Proceedings of the fourteenth annual congress of Nigerian Rural Sociological

Association held at Olabisi Onabanjo University, Ogun State, Nigeria

- [4] Anyanwu, C.N. (1982) Community education and development in Nigeria. Abiprint Publishing company Ltd, Lagos
- [5] Okodudu, S. (1998) Issues in community development, Emhai Printing and publishing company, Port Harcourt.
- [6] Ofo, C. (2001) Research methods and statistics. Joja Press Ltd, Lagos
- [7] Onyeozu, A.M. (2007) Understanding community development. Davidstones Publishers Ltd, Port Harcourt
- [8] Ihejirika, J.C. (2007) Fundamentals of adult education and community development. Abigab Associates Ltd, Uyo
- [9] Adesope, O.M. (2007) Agricultural youth organisations. Introductory concepts. Second edition. University of Port Harcourt Press, Port Harcourt
- [10] Oyebamiji, M.A and Adekola, G. (2008) Fundamentals of community development in Nigeria. University of Port Harcourt Press, Port Harcourt.

9/10/2010

# 几个理论物理问题

Xue Sheng

Abstract: 现代物理学的理论是根据对称产生的,可是我们周围的世界又是不对称的,笔者根据现代科技理论提出了对称的相对性与绝对性原理,分析了有限与无限的相对性与绝对性、离散与连续的相对性与绝对性、全息的相对性与绝对性、运动与静止的相对性与绝对性、时空的相对性与绝对性、同时性的相对性与绝对性等.

[Xue Sheng. 请教几个理论物理问题. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):54-57]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: 物理学; 称产生;相对性; 绝对性;同时性

- 一、 现代物理学的理论是根据对称产生的,可是我们周围的世界又是不对称的,李政道教授把分立对称性失效的原因列为 21 世纪科技界面临的四大难题之一,您如何理解这个问题呢?笔者根据现代科技理论提出了对称的相对性与绝对性原理,不知是否正确?另外分析了有限与无限的相对性与绝对性、离散与连续的相对性与绝对性、全息的相对性与绝对性、运动与静止的相对性与绝对性、时空的相对性与绝对性、同时性的相对性与绝对性等,参加附件第一章《哲学探索》(有些在后面).
- 二、 从 Einstein 狭义相对论我们知道,运动物体发生"尺缩"、"钟慢"等效应。运动物体"尺缩"效应在狭义相对论看来并不是动体自身物质的收缩,只是时空的一种性质,是时空测量中必然产生的效应,动体的内部结构不会发生任何变化;按 Einstein 自己的说法:狭义相对论是涉及到刚性棒、理想钟和光信号的理论,根本不考虑动体物质的具体结构和动力学效应问题,这样狭义相对论中动体的"尺缩""钟慢"等效应是不是一种伴随动体物质结构变化的物理实在以及动体运动过程中基本性物理量的真实变化,在狭义相对论中,根据洛伦兹变换运动物体的长度在运动方向上收缩,是观察效应,还是本质规律?洛伦兹认为这种收缩效应是实在的、客观的,是真实的动力学效应,这种收缩效应引起物质内部结构和物理性质变化,对物质来说具有普遍意义。狭义相对论中'钟慢、尺缩'属运动学效应,而广义相对论中。它们已属动力学效应,不应该是观察效应,而是物理的真实性。Einstein 曾说过:"……仅仅是外部关系的结果,不是一种真正的物理变化"。如果仅仅是观测效应,显然不符和 Einstein 的哲学观——"有一个独立于知觉之外的客观世界是一切自然科学的基础",您如何理解这个关系?
- 三、 根据 Einstein 的观点,狭义相对论效应不具有累积效应。如果不具有累积效应,那么在实验中怎么测量狭义相对论效应?时间与长度的变换符合洛沦兹变换,您如何理解双生子佯谬和潜水艇悖论?假设一个物体在运动方向上的长度为1,开始由静止做加速运动,当速度达到0.99c时开始减速直到静止,那么开始与最后的长度是否相等?如果速度相等说明不具有累积效应,时间变换也符合洛沦兹变换,为什么现代物理学的实验证明时间膨胀(譬如μ子绕地运行)具有累积效应,而长度收缩是瞬时效应?

笔者重新分析了洛伦兹变换,说明了其真实含义,使狭义相对论时钟收缩效应与广义相对论的时钟收缩效应统一在一起,圆满地解释了双生子佯谬和潜水艇悖论,说明了相对性原理正确的原因,不知是否正确?相对论中时间膨胀公式里带有光速 C,但是光速是速度,速度这个量本身就带有时间那么这个公式有没有问题?既然时间是物体空间运动的历史积累,那么为什么运行速度不同时间会不同呢,现在有没有更深层次揭示时间本质的理论?参加附件第四章《狭义相对论的时空观》

- 四、 根据相对论空间与时间是密不可分的, 狭义相对论指明了时间与空间是等价的, 提出了四维时空的问题, 笔者进一步提出了时空平权理论, 把量子力学中的光速等于 1 看作是自然界的本质, 假设 1s=3.0 ×10<sup>8</sup>m, 这样可以把国际基本物理量减少 1 个, 并在此基础上根据量纲得到了质能方程, 不知是否正确? 参加附件第五章《质能方程本质的再认识》
- 五、 Einstein 一直把相对论称为场论,而人们总是把相对论称为研究时空的理论,那么引力场和时空 到底是什么关系? 笔者认为引力场的本质是时空,是相对时空。在此基础上说明了引力的传播速度等于 光速,不知道是否正确?真空破缺的动力学机制是什么?基本粒子是如何生成的? 真空为何存在零点振荡能?能量来自何处?参加附件第七章《广义相对论的时空观》
- 六、 电荷究竟是什么(实体?属性?运动效应?振荡模式?)?
- 七、 现代物理学认为电磁质量由电荷附近的电磁场分布结构决定,与电荷没有多大的直接关系,只是 间接关系.电荷附近的电磁场的源是电荷.但当电荷运动的时候,电荷附近的电磁场分布结构会发生变化,

如发生压缩畸变,其分布结构是速度的函数,这可见一般教材。于是,电磁质量也是速度的函数。现代物理学认为电子的电磁质量是电子静止质量的一部分,Einstein 曾经试图证明电子的电磁质量是电子质量的 2/3,但是没有成功,现代物理学中相对论和量子力学对于电子的电磁质量的计算是矛盾的,彭桓武认为这个问题可能需要未来的高等数学来解决。Einstein 晚年已经认识到 electric charge 没有引力质量的问题,指明引力场和 lectricc field 是逻辑上毫无联系的两部分。笔者通过认真地思考后认为电磁质量不可能是引力质量的一部分,原因有八个方面:

- 第一,根据广义相对论,物理定律对于任何物理定律具有相同的形式。当电子在引力场中加速运动的时候,其电量是不变,不满足 Lorentz transformation,所以其电磁质量也应该不变,电荷的电磁质量既然由电荷所带的电量决定,那么应当是电量的增函数。如果电子的电磁质量与运动速度有关,满足 Lorentz transformation,那么电子的电荷具有的能量也满足 Lorentz transformation,不符合广义相对论的要求。
- 第二,物体的静止质量是内禀的,是个常数,有人认为电磁质量是应该与静止质量有关的,电磁场的能量由电荷决定,电量与带电体的运动状态无关,引力质量与运动状态有关。假设电子的静止引力质量是 m, 电子的电磁质量是 m, 电子的引力质量另外的部分为 m- m<sub>1</sub>。当电子以 $\sqrt{3}/2$ c 运动时,根据洛伦兹变换此时电子的引力质量为 2m, 电子的引力质量另外的部分为 2m-2m<sub>1</sub>,电子的电磁质量应当为 2 m<sub>1</sub>,可是电子的电量没有变化,显然存在着不和谐。电量不满足 Lorentz transformation,因此把电磁质量作为引力质量的一部分存在着不协调性——只要维持电子电荷值不变的观念,这个问题不管怎么也解释不通。这中间,要么质速关系式错了,要么就是电子电荷值不变的信念错了,然而这与实验事实又高度一致。由于公式  $E=mc^2$ ,物体的引力结合能具有(负)质量,因而系统总质量不等于各部分质量之和。而在麦克斯韦理论中,作为线性理论的直接结果,电荷(类比于质量)是严格可加的。
- 第三, 电磁力存在吸引与排斥两种状态,只有物体带电时才有,而引力是永远存在的;如果电磁质量是引力质量的一部分,那么库仑力也应当是万有引力的一部分,电子、质子等带电粒子之间的电磁力远大于万有引力,电磁质量远大于引力质量,电磁质量不可能是引力质量的一部分;电子激发的电磁场的能量小于电子的电磁质量,正如物体激发的引力场能量小于引力质量的能量一样。
- 第四,根据质速关系引力质量可以连续变化,而电荷和电磁场呈量子化分布,现代物理学未让量子力学进入的唯一领域是引力和宇宙的大尺度结构,将引力场量子化遇到无穷大的困难。重整化可以消除无限大的问题,但是由于重整化意味着引力质量的作用力的强度的实际值不能从理论上得到预言,必须被选择以去适合观测,因此重整化有一严重缺陷。目前要取得进展,能够建议采用的最有力的方法,就是在企图完成和推广组成理论物理现有基础的数学形式时,利用纯数学的所有源泉,并在这个方面取得每次成功之后,试着用物理的实体来解释新的数学特色。
- 第五, 电磁质量具有正负,电磁质量应当相反,而物体的引力质量无此区别。现代物理学认为中子有一个上夸克和两个下夸克组成,外观上看电量为 0,由于每个夸克均激发电磁场,因此电磁质量不等于 0,显然存在不协调性。电荷分为正负,但电场的能量密度却总是正的,所以积分得到的电磁能量总是正的,因而电磁质量也总是一个正值。根据牛顿第二定律,惯性质量是表征当物体受到外力作用的时候,物体运动状态改变的难易程度,即物体保持原来运动状态的本领大小的物理量。这个和电荷的正负无关,所以正负电子可以具有相同的惯性质量。当正负电荷中和的时候,电磁质量减少,引力质量没增加,但正负电荷中和会释放原来具有的电势能,即原来的电磁质量会转化为别的能量,如正负电荷中和释放两个光子,则原来的电磁质量就转化到了光子中。那么转化的机制是什么?同种电荷的电磁力相互排斥,异种电荷的电磁力相互吸引,电荷之间的作用力依靠电磁场来传递,为什么电磁场的能量都是正值?一个中性原子的电磁场的能量为 0,说明正负电荷激发的电磁场的能量相反。
- 第六, Einstein 的广义相对论是引力理论,把引力场量子化给出引力场的量子成为引力子,它应 具有自旋为 2,和 lectriec field 的量子——光子性质很不相同。近年来理论上对超对 称性的探讨提供了新的可能性,超对称性在自旋不同的粒子间建立了联系,因此就有可能

把引力相互作用和其它相互作用联系起来,通过超对称性建立的四种相互作用的统一理论 称为超大统一理论。但是根据对称的相对性与绝对性原理,超对称的工作是没有止境的。 超对称要求除引力子外,还应当有自旋 3/2 的引力微子存在,但是实验上并没有发现它的存在。另外量子化的引力理论遇到了难以克服的无穷大困难;

- 第七, 引力质量都占有一定的空间,也就是具有体积,而电磁质量没有体积,因此量子电动力学的点模型观点是正确的。
- 第八, 电磁质量和引力质量可以分离,存在 Maxwell 理论中脱离物体携带能量的场。最近,法国 里昂的科学家发现了有四个中子组成的粒子,又称为"零号元素"。最新的实验表明,中 微子具有引力质量,大约为电子引力质量的 50000 分之一。中微子具有引力质量但是不带 有 electric charge——电磁质量。现代物理学认为除了带电介子外,还存在中性介子, 其(引力)质量恰好等于或者近似等于(其实相等)带电介子的(引力)质量,性质相似。 Einstein 指出了波函数坍缩过程与相对论之间的不相容性,Einstein 的这一分析是关于量子力学与相对论的不相容性的最早认识。

或许有人会说电磁质量与引力质量是毫无关系的两部分,那么有何作用力把它们联系在一起,笔者认为靠作用力联系在一起,是引力质量、电磁质量各自联系的思想,没有任何作用力也可以联系在一起。文章首先回顾了惯性质量和引力质量之间的关系的认识,然后分析了经典电动力学和量子电动力学对于电磁质量计算结果的差异,通过把引力质量与电磁质量区分开来,说明了希格斯机制的引入是多余的,希格斯粒子根本不存在,把电量的度量单位库仑与质量的度量单位千克统一起来,从而把国际基本物理量减少为 5 个,从根本上解决了升降机中静止电荷的辐射问题和光子的静止质量问题,提出了 Lorentz transformation 变换不适用于电磁质量,量子力学的统计观点不适用于引力质量,从根本上解决了"薛定谔猫徉谬"的问题,把质能方程从引力质量推广到电磁质量,预言了新的能量来源,定性地解释了类星体的爆炸,通过电磁质量的量子化解决了夸克禁闭问题,分析了中微子问题、量子力学的基础,根据引力场的 space-time 本质的观点从根本上解决了 Einstein 与哥本哈根学派之间关系量子力学基础之间的争论,不知是否正确?参见附件第八章《引力质量与电磁质量之间的关系新探》.

经典电动力学认为加速运动的电荷能够辐射电磁波,而量子力学指出电子在同一能级内做加速运动不能辐射电磁波,如何把它们统一在一起?根据经典电动力学,自由真空中的电子,如果给它一个加速度,它也能发射电磁波,进一步造成自我加速,一边加速,一边产生电磁波,这里能量的确不守恒。这是经典电子论的缺陷。在一些书上有描述。

- 八、 如何解释下面的理想实验:假设在一个强引力场中有两个物体,一个不带电荷,另一个带有电荷,它们的引力质量相等(较小,它们之间的引力作用可以忽略),分别位于 A、B 两点,观察者处于强引力场中,两个物体同时由静止出发相向运动,它们所受的力相等。按照狭义相对论,它们的引力质量在任何时刻都相等,引力能量相等,可是由带电的物体将不断地辐射电磁波,那么能量从何而来?如果能量守恒把物体辐射的电磁波考虑在内,由于电磁力满足字称守恒,因此辐射电磁波的总动量应当为 0,由带电的物体速度应当大,能量仍然不守恒。笔者通过电磁质量的量子化以及电磁质量不是引力质量的一部分,圆满地解释了这个问题,不知是否正确?参见附件第九章《电磁质量的物理特性》
- 九、 假设一个中性的氢原子在电磁场中作变速运动,根据经典电动力学应当不辐射电磁波,可是如果我们把电子和质子分开来分析,那么它们应该都辐射电磁波,如何解释这个问题?现代物理学认为光子不带有电量,作为创建"量子场论路径积分"的核心人物费曼先生,认为两个静电荷之间的相互作用的传递过程是交换虚光子来完成的,可用费曼图形象地表示。笔者认为光子不具有引力质量(惯性质量),而具有电磁质量(电量),只是太小,实验中可能观察不到。质子与电子辐射的光子的能量相反,便可以圆满解释上面的理想实验,进一步否定了"超光速问题",解释了光速不变性原理、光速为物体运动的极限速度的原因与广义相对论的红移危机。量子隐形传态中的两个相距甚远的关联粒子之间的'相互作用'机制是什么? 基本粒子质量谱可能与何因素有关?在大统一理论中为何存在"大沙漠"现象,其物理原因是什么?参见附件第十章《光学问题》
- 十、 在已知的主要的相互作用中,都有着明显的区间作用性:在强子内部和周围,强相互作用起着主要作用;在原子世界,电磁相互作用占着主导地位;引力相互作用在微观世界是微不足道的,到了太阳系世界,它才成了支配天体运动的主宰。现代物理学认为弱相互作用和强相互作用只适用于微观世界,可是

微观与宏观没有截然的界限,微观、宏观、宇观是人为规定的,人类的生存空间并不是宇宙大的方面和小的方面的绝对分界线,这显然存在着不协调性。现代物理学已经把电磁力与强相互作用的统一问题起来,可是对于电磁力同种电荷相互排斥,而对于强相互作用作用力的方向相反,如何理解这一关系?笔者指明了四种相互作用力之间的关系,万有引力与弱相互作用、电磁力与强相互作用是互为反作用力,在此基础上分析了宇宙常数、暗物质与暗能量、引力祥谬和密度祥谬、太阳角动量的逃逸的问题,从根本上说明卡西米尔效应(Casimir effect)是不存在的,否定了宇宙大爆炸理论和黑洞的存在,定性地解释了"DI 海格立斯双星进动"问题和轻子为何不参与强相互作用,对统一场论的研究可能会有所帮助,不知是否正确?为何基本相互作用都是汤川型强相互作用?参见附件第九章《电磁质量的物理特性》和第十二章《引力质量的物理特性》。

- 十一、 广义相对论认为一切参考系都等价,无法确定整个宇宙的运动状态,可是大爆炸理论却认为这个宇宙处于膨胀阶段,如何理解这一关系?能量守恒定律认为能量是不可创造,质量守恒定律认为质量是不可创造,大爆炸理论认为能量、物质(质量)、空间、时间已经被一个无限小的点爆炸创造,并且是在四大皆空发生的,如何理解这些关系?宇宙学观测表明宇宙是膨胀着的。通过对微波背景辐射和宇宙大尺度结构等的观测,宇宙的历史可以追溯到极早期发生的大爆炸。我们所知的基本物理,比如广义相对论和粒子物理标准模型,在那里都不适用。为理解宇宙起源,需要了解大爆炸时期的基本物理。笔者通过把弱相互作用和万有引力看作是互为反作用力、时空平权理论,定性地解释了大爆炸理论的实验依据,否定了大爆炸理论。参见第九章《宇宙学思考》
- 十二、 超导体为何无电阻,目前超导体研究现状如何?超导中的库柏对为何两个电子的自旋方向相反,动量方向也相反?高温超导的微观机理是什么?可否发现室温超导体?现代科学如何认识地磁场形成的原因的,以及磁偏角? 波的衍射条件背后是否存在更本质的规律?全反射现象说明了光在同一种介质中并非一定沿直线传播,是否与广义相对论矛盾?能量最低原理认为物体只有处于最低状态才稳定,在这些现象背后是否存在着更本质的规律?

7/15/2010

# Determinants Of Farm And Off –Farm Income Among Farmhouseholds In South East Nigeira

Ibekwe, U.C; C.C. Eze; C.S. Onyemauwa; A. Henri-Ukoha; O.C. Korie and I.U. Nwaiwu

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology, P.M.B. 1526, Owerri, Imo State, Nigeria.

E-mail: csonyemauwa@yahoo.com

**Abstract:** Agriculture has been considered as one of the important sectors that could help and improve the income distribution problem and its poverty implications in South Eastern Nigeria. This has led to the focus of this study on the determinants of the farm and off farm income among the farm households in South East Nigeria and Imo State in particular. Primary data were collected and ordinary least squared regression model was used to analyze the data collected. Results showed that: Farm size, age, education, occupation and hours spent on farm are important explanatory variables that influenced both farm and off farm incomes.

[Ibekwe, U.C; C.C. Eze; C.S. Onyemauwa; A. Henri-Ukoha; O.C. Korie and I.U. Nwaiwu. Determinants Of Farm And Off –Farm Income Among Farmhouseholds In South East Nigeira. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):58-61]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: Determinants, Farm, Off-farm, Income, Diversification, Push factors

#### Introduction

There has been substantial growth over the past decade in household employment outside own farming (Ibekwe, 2001, Nwaru, 2007). At present, due to the increasing share of off-farm incomes, they cannot be considered as marginal (Ibekwe, 2001). Economies in transition are gradually shifting toward a market economy and this shift has been driven in part by push and pulls factors. Though many farm households do not produce for the market and therefore cannot enjoy the benefits of the market economy evidence suggest that non farm activities in the non farm sector include, manufacturing and services both in self employment and wage employment and also in the agricultural sector wage employment.

Despite the growing importance of farm and of farm activities very little is known about the role they play in the income generation strategies of farm households in developing economies like Nigeria. This paper thus has two objectives. The first is to analyze the determinants of farm households in Imo state to undertake farm and non – farm activities. We postulate that the income from these activities will depend on the farm households, assets financial and human resources. The second objective is to explore the implications of income diversification strategies. It is important to note that promotion of non farm activity is not necessarily improvement in the income distribution unless specific policy interventions are provided.

The common view of the rural sector is that of a sector driven almost entirely by agriculture. Thus rural income is equated with farm income.

Policy makers view policies to combat rural poverty as policies to enhance farm productivity (World Bank, 1996). Despite this narrow view, there is growing evidence in the South Eastern Nigeria that rural sector is much more than farming (Nwaru, 2004) Reardon, et al (2007), summarized the evidence of the nature, importance, determinants and effects rural non farm activity on farm households in developing countries. They showed the growing importance of rural non farm activities which accounted for 25% of employment and as much as 40% of the incomes generated in rural Latin America. In the South Eastern Nigeria, there are two dominant occupations in the rural areas, viz, farm and non farm activities but there is not much research in the diversification and determinants of farm households' farm and off farm incomes.

# **Materials and Methods**

The study was carried out in Imo State, South East Nigeria. Imo State is divided into three agricultural zones namely, Okigwe, Orlu and Owerri Zones. Imo State has a high atmospheric temperature which varies slightly within the year. The mean daily maximum temperature is about 30°C with the highest temperature recorded between February and April (AISAN, 1984). The mean annual rainfall ranges from 2, 400mm in the South to about 1,900mm in the North.

A multi stage random sampling technique was used in the study. The survey consists of the three agricultural zones in Imo State. A list of local government Areas in the three agricultural zones was compiled. From this list of Local Government Areas

a list of farm households was made for each Local Government Area. From this list of farm households compiled which has 100 farm households for each Local Government Area, 30 farm households were randomly selected for Orlu and Owerri agricultural Zones while 40 farm households were also randomly selected for Okigwe agricultural zone due to large number of farm households and farming activities in Okigwe agricultural zone. This gave a sample size of 100 farm households as respondents.

Information gathered included that on self employment, wage employment, farm and off farm activities that do not generate wage or salary earnings, non farm income outside own farming activities among others. Data collected were analyzed using descriptive statistics and ordinary least squared (OLS) method of regression for non farm incomes. The implicit model of the regression is as follows.

$$Y = f(X_1, X_2, X_3, X_4, X_5, X_6, X_7, e)$$

Where:

Y = Total farm income or total non –farm income (in Naira)

 $X_1$  = Age of household head (years)

 $X_2$  = Number of years spent in school (years)

 $X_3$  = Farm size (in hectares)

X<sub>4</sub> = Occupation (Dummy: 1 for full time farming and 0 for otherwise)

 $X_5$  = Household size (Number of persons)

 $X_6$  = Farm Investment (in Naira)

 $X_7$  = Number of hours spent on farm (hours)

e = Stochastic error term.

Different functional forms were tested and the lead equation which is double—log function was selected on the basis of F-ratio, t-ratios, number of statistically significant exogenous variables and a-priori expectations.

#### **Results and Discussion**

The aggregate household income estimated in the study area was N216, 319.17 for farm income and N153, 428.24 for off-farm income. The total household farm income was found to be N369, 737. 41. This result is similar to that estimated by Ibekwe (2001). The result showed that farm income was 58.50 percent of total farm household income while non-farm income was 41.50% of the total farm household income. This shows that farm income was the most important source of income for the farm household income. However, the fact that off-farm income forms 41.50 percent of farm households income was an evidence of the growing importance of off-farm income in the study area. This has implication for viewing the role of non farm incomes as complementary by policy makers.

This result is similar to that of Reardon et al (1998) which noted that some households are "pushed" to diversify their activities to non farm sector to cope with external shocks to their farming activities. This is because It often pays more than farming and generates cash. The estimated farm and non farm income function are presented in table 1.

Table 1: Estimated farm and off -farm income functions

Variables	Farm income	Off-farm income
Intercept	-945584	-1628230.0
Age of Household head (X <sub>1</sub> )	-0.0641*	-0.0616*
_	(0.0209)	(0.0267)
Education of household head	0.8190 *	0.0749 *
(x2)	(0.0227)	(0.0261)
Farm size (x <sub>3</sub> )	0.1737 *	-0.0143 *
	(0.0413)	(0.0069)
Occupation (X4)	0.0552 *	-0.0106 *
	(0.0169)	(0.0413)
House hold size (x5)	0.0917 *	-0.0521
	(0.0308)	(0.0473)
Farm investment (X6)	0.0655	-0.0748

	(0.0591)	(0.0667)
Value of farm out put	0.0914 *	-0.0054 *
_	(0.0297)	(0.0197)
$\mathbb{R}^2$	0.7244 15	0.7853
F – ratio	7705 *	21.4545*

# Source: Field Survey Data, 2009

\* = Significant at 5%

Figures in parenthesis are standard errors

#### **Estimated Farm Income Function**

The F-ratio was statistically significant at 5 percent level of significance which was the level chosen for this study. This implies that the estimated farm income function was adequate for use in prediction and analysis. The R<sup>2</sup> implied that 72 percent of the variation in farm income was explained by the independent variables.

Land was a very important resource in the study area. Due to the fragmented nature of farm holdings, an increase in farm size in form of land consolidations will increase farm income through better economies of Scale (Ibekwe, 2001; Nwaru, 2004). The small size of farm holdings has been one of the factors that are driving people out of farm business and has been regarded by many authors as one of the push factors (Readon, et al, 1998). Education was significant and positively correlated with farm income. This conforms to Alimba (1995). Education and training produce a labour force that is skilled. Unskilled agricultural wage labour is supplied by rural households. This has implication for poor wages and low income.

The age of household head was significant and negatively correlated with farm income. This may be due to the fact that the older the farmer the less productive the farmers will be. This equally has implication for farm productivity. Occupation of house hold head was significant and positively correlated with farm household income. Variation in types of activities pursued by households has been shown to be related to the income level of the farm household (Ibekwe 2001). Hence non farm incomes are forms of diversification of incomes and insurance against risks of set back in farm income.

Farm household size was significant and correlated with farm income. This may be due to the fact that increase in farm household size means increase in family labour. This has implication for availability of labour during peak periods of farm activities. Farm investment is positively correlated with farm income and significant at five percent. Farm investment can lead to improve productivity through employment of modern farm technologies. The variable, hours spent on farm work was significant and positively correlated with farm

income. This means that increased hours of farm work contributes to improved farm income due to hard and efficient work. This has implication for off farm activities (Alimba and Akubuilo, 2005)

# **Estimated Off-farm Income Functions.**

The F- ratio for off farm income was significant; the  $R^2$  was 0.7843 and also significant at five percent. This means that the regression equation has correctly specified the non zero relationships in the specified off farm income model.

The age of household head was significant at five percent and also negatively correlated with off-farm incomes. This is in line with a-priori expectation since the older the farmer the more likely he is to receive lower income in the employment market outside the farm.

The parameter, education was significant and positively correlated with off farm income. Farm households with more education tend to pursue nonagricultural self employments such as handicrafts. commerce, tools, machinery repairs and agro processing (Lanjouw, 1999). Education and training produces a labour force that is mobilized, more skilled, prone to risk taking and adaptable to the needs of a changing economy (Eboh and Ocheoha, 2002). Farm size was negative and significant at five percent. This conforms to a priori expectation. Increase in off farm activities will definitely reduce income from farm activities. This has implication for diversification of resources from farm activities which in turn will lead to reduced farming scale and consequently reduced farm income.

Occupation is negatively correlated with off farm income. This may be due to the fact that off farm activities compete with farm activities in terms of household resources. Household size is not significant and it is also negatively correlated with farm household income. Also the parameter farm investment was not significant but was also negatively correlated with off-farm income. These are in line with a priori expectation as they play little or no role in off farm employment the variable hours spent on the farm was significant but negatively correlated with off farm income. This is also in line with apriori expectation as more hours spent on farm

means less hours available for off farm employment and consequent income.

#### **CONCLUSION:**

We have shown the importance of off farm activities in South East Nigeria. At present more than 40% of the income from farm households came from off farm activities, this suggests that the off farm activities should no longer be considered as "marginal" as they have so often by policy makers. The reasons to diversify income are various. Agricultural activities are the most important source of income among the farm households accounting for 58.50 percent of the total farm household income. Within this category the most important source of income is income from crops. Households also were engaged in many different activities in both farm and off farm.

## REFERENCES

- Alimba, J.O. "Linkages between Farm and Non Farm Sectors of the Nigeria Rural Economy "Rural Development in Nigeria. Concepts, processors and projects. Eboh, E.C Okoye, C.U. and O. Anyichi (eds) Enugu, Nigeria Auto Century Publishers Company Limited. 1995. Pp 31 – 41.
- Alimba, J.O and C. Akubuilo. "consequences of Technical change on farm enterprises in South Eastern Nigeria: Implications for Agricultural Transformation in Honour of professor Martin O. Ijere. August 24: 26 Owerri Novelty Industrial Enterprises Ltd. 2005. PP. 210 – 223.
- 3. Ibekwe, U.C. Income Distribution Among Farm Households in Orlu Agricultural Zone of Imo

- State. 2001. Unpublished Ph.D thesis, Department of Agricultural Economics, University of Nigeria Nsukka.
- Nwaru, J.C. Rural credit markets and Resources use in Arable Crop Production in Imo State of Nigeria. A Ph.D Dissertation, 2004. Michael Okpara University of Agricultural, Umudike, Nigeria.
- 5. Eboh E.C. and K.N Ocheoha. "Determinants of Rural Non- farm sector potential in Reducing income poverty: Evidence from Enugu State, Nigeria" Agriculture; A Basis for poverty eradication and conflict Resolution, Iloeje, M.U, Osuji, G.E; Herbert, U and G.N. Asumugha (eds) proceedings of the 36<sup>th</sup> Annual onference of the Agricultural Society of Nigeria 2004 held at the Federal University of Technology, Owerri, Nigeria.
- 6. Lanjouw, P. "Rural, Non Agricultural Employment and Poverty in Ecuador Economic Development and cultural change.1999. 48 (1) October; 91 -122
- 7. Reardon, T. Using Evidence of Household Income Diversification to inform study of the Rural Non farm labour market in Africa. World Development. 1997. 25 (5), 735 748
- 8. World Bank Nigeria, Poverty in the midst of plenty. The challenge of growth. A World Bank Poverty Assessment Report. Population and Human Resources Division. 1996. World Bank, Washington, USA.
- 9. Readon T, Stamoulis, R, Cruz, M.E, Balican A Berdegue, J.A, andB Banks. "Rural Non farm income in Developing Countries special chapter in FAO. 1998. The state of food and Agriculture 1998. Rome: Food and Agriculture Organization.

09/27/2010

# 对万有引力的再考察

(再评广义相对论)

# 谭天荣

# 青岛大学物理系青岛 266071

内容提要:在考察加速系的物理学时,我们在狭义相对论的框架内找到了的惯性力的协变规律,以及惯性系的物理学方程在加速系的变形。在这一基础上,本文重新表述了"等效原理",并展开了一个新的引力场论,它具有如下特征:第一,等效原理是它的逻辑结论;第二,通过"引力场张量"的概念,它与牛顿引力理论紧密衔接;第三,它的数学结构简单,与其他自然力的场论相比并没有特别迥异之处。此外,还在此基础上指出广义相对论的几个逻辑上的漏洞。

[遭天荣. **对万有引力的再考察.** Academia Arena 2010;2(10):62-66]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

**关键词:**曲线坐标;加速系;惯性力;爱因斯坦;等效原理;引力场论

# 1. 引言

牛顿的万有引力定律与静电学的库伦定律相似,都具有反平方力的形式,但在物理学史上,引力场论与电磁场论的发展进程却迥然不同:在建立库仑定律之后,电磁场论突飞猛进,积累了极为丰富的实验资料与理论成果,例如,安培环路定律,电磁感应定律以及关于电磁波的理论与应用等等,终于建成为一个优美而完整的理论体系;相反,引力场论在牛顿引力定律之后却长期踏步不前。直到上世纪 20 年代,爱因斯坦才借助于逻辑推理建立一个像电磁场论一样完整的引力场论——广义相对论。

然而,广义相对论立足于"广义协变性"。我们已经证明:加速系物理学实际上不是遵循"广义协变性",而是遵循"准洛伦兹协变性"。本文将在此基础上,提出一个比广义相对论更简单、更自然的引力场论。

事先声明,我假定读者没有学过广义相对论,或者,虽然学过,但还能容忍有异于广义相对论的观点。 因此,在本文中我采用先立后破的顺序,先提出一个新的引力场论,然后再批判广义相对论。

# 2. 引力场与电磁场的比较

库仑定律(真空中的)一方面给出高斯方程

$$\nabla \cdot \mathbf{E} = \frac{\rho}{\epsilon_0}$$

另一方面给出静电力方程

$$\mathbf{f} = \rho \mathbf{E}$$

此外,静电场的无旋性方程

$$\nabla \times \mathbf{E} = 0$$

表明可以引进静电势(), 使得

$$\mathbf{E} = -\nabla \phi$$

于是高斯方程给出静电学的泊松方程

$$\Delta \phi = -\frac{\rho}{\epsilon_0}$$

借助于相同的数学步骤,从牛顿的引力定律也可以得出一组形式上完全相同的场方程。但引力场论与电磁场论的相似性只能到此为止。

对于电磁场,电磁力(洛伦兹力)的密度与电功率密度组成一个四维时空的一阶张量(矢量)f<sup>4</sup>,它电

荷电流密度矢量 $J_n$ 的关系是 $f^{\lambda} = F^{\lambda\mu}J_n$ ,其中 $F^{\lambda\mu}$ 是电磁场的强度,它是一个二阶张量。

根据相对论(指狭义相对论,下同),正如电磁场的作用对象是一阶张量 $J_{\mu}$ 一样,引力场的作用对象是能量动量密度张量 $T^{\mu\nu}$ ,它是一个二阶张量,于是引力场的作用对象比电磁场的作用对象 $J_{\mu}$ 高一阶。根据张量分析,引力场张量也应该比电磁场张量高一阶。对比电磁学方程 $T^{\mu} = F^{\lambda\mu}J_{\mu}$ ,我们得出结论:

A. 引力场的强度由一个三阶张量  $L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 表示,引力作用于物质的规律表现为引力密度  $f^{\lambda}$ 与能量动量张量  $T^{\mu\nu}$ 的如下关系

$$f^{\lambda} = L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} T^{\mu\nu}. \tag{1}$$

另一方面,对比电荷电流激发电磁场的规律 $\nabla_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{F}^{\lambda\mu} = \mu_{\mathbf{u}} \mathbf{J}^{\lambda}$ ,我们得到:

B. 存在普适常量β,使得物质激发引力场的规律表成

$$\nabla_{\lambda} L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} = \beta T_{\mu\nu}$$

到此为止,还有一个工作有待完成,那就是给出引力势与引力场之间的关系,它对应于电磁场论中的电磁势 $\mathbf{A}^{\lambda}$ 与场强 $\mathbf{F}^{\mu\nu}$ 的关系 $\mathbf{F}^{\mu\nu} = \nabla^{\mu}\mathbf{A}^{\nu} - \nabla^{\nu}\mathbf{A}^{\mu}$ 。为了完成这一工作,让我们转向另一思路。

# 3. 等效原理与引力势

一个处于电场中的带电粒子,其行为不仅与当地的电场强度有关,而且还与它自身的"荷质比"有关,但一个处于引力场中的质点,其对应的"荷质比"就是它的引力质量与惯性质量之比,而这个比值却是一个普适常量。从这一事实出发,爱因斯坦提出如下理想实验:如果一个升降机自由下落,则升降机作为一个加速系,其惯性力与重力相互抵消,从而升降机内的观察者处于失重状态。并由此得出了著名的"等效原理"。按照我们的理解,这个原理可表述如下:

C. 任意给定引力场,存在一个特殊的加速系,其惯性力场与该引力场相互抵消。 我们称这个特殊的加速系为该引力场的"特征参照系"。下面,我们进一步考察命题 C。

首先,把命题 A 应用于一个质点,可得出结论:

D. 对于洛伦兹坐标系(惯性系;笛卡尔坐标),一个质点在引力场  $L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 中的运动方程为

$$\frac{d^2x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} = L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} \,. \tag{2}$$

根据我们对加速系物理学的理解,可得出两个结论:

第一,对于一个惯性力场为 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 的加速系,(2)式作为张量方程仍然成立,但有两点改变,其一是增加了一项惯性力,从而方程变为:

$$\frac{d^2x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} = (L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} - \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}) \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau}; \tag{3}$$

其二是方程的协变性改变了: (2) 式遵循洛伦兹协变性, 而(3) 式则遵循准洛伦兹协变性。

第二,对于任意加速系,惯性力场与"度规"满足关系:

$$\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} g^{\lambda\rho} (\nabla_{\mu} g_{\nu\rho} + \nabla_{\nu} g_{\rho\mu} - \nabla_{\rho} g_{\mu\nu})_{\circ}$$
 (4)

这个关系显示,加速系的度规是惯性力的"势"。于是,等效原理可追溯到如下两个假定:

E. 引力势是一个二阶张量 $\Phi_{uv}$ ,对于其特征参照系,有

$$\Phi_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} \, g_{\mu\nu} \, ^{\circ}$$

F. 如果一个引力场 $L_{\lambda uv}$ 的引力势是 $\Phi_{uv}$ ,则有

$$L_{\lambda\mu\nu} = \nabla_{\mu}\Phi_{\nu\lambda} + \nabla_{\nu}\Phi_{\lambda\mu} - \nabla_{\lambda}\Phi_{\mu\nu}.$$

这一关系对于任意坐标系都成立;对于洛伦兹坐标系它具有洛伦兹协变性,对曲线坐标系它具有准洛伦兹协变性。

从命题 D、E 和 F 可以导出命题 C, 证明如下:

根据命题F,引力势为 $\Phi_{uv}$ 的引力场张量可表成

$$L^{\lambda}_{\ \mu\nu} = g^{\lambda\rho}L_{\rho\mu\nu} = g^{\lambda\rho}(\nabla_{\mu}\Phi_{\nu\rho} + \nabla_{\nu}\Phi_{\rho\mu} - \nabla_{\rho}\Phi_{\mu\nu})_{\circ}$$

这一方程也对任意参照系成立。根据命题 E,对于特征参照系,这个方程给出

$$L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} g^{\lambda\rho} (\nabla_{\mu} g_{\nu\rho} + \nabla_{\nu} g_{\rho\mu} - \nabla_{\rho} g_{\mu\nu})_{\circ}$$
 (5)

(4) 式与(5) 式给出结论:对于引力场 $L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 的特征参照系,有

$$\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} = L^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$$

考虑到(3)式,这一等式表明命题 C 成立。

命题 B 与命题 F 给出:

G. 物质激发引力势的公式是

$$\nabla^{\lambda}(\nabla_{u}\Phi_{v\lambda} + \nabla_{v}\Phi_{\lambda u} - \nabla_{\lambda}\Phi_{uv}) = \beta T_{uv}.$$

上面诸命题可以分为两类,命题 A、B、D、E 和 G 对惯性系成立,从而其中的方程对洛伦兹变换保持协变,以这组方程为基本方程,可以展开一个新的引力场论,我们姑且称它为"自然引力论"。而命题 C 和 F 则涉及等效原理和特征参照系等概念,它们只不过是为建立新的引力大厦而支起的手足架,没有必要保留在已经建成的大厦之中。

## 4. 引力场论与黎曼几何

如果你问一位精通广义相对论的学者,为什么要用黎曼几何来描述万有引力,在绝大多数情况下,你得到的答复将是:"这是广义相对论的基本假设,不要问为什么!"或者回你一句俏皮话:"你问爱因斯坦去!"

这种回答实在令人沮丧。在考察加速系的物理学时,我们已经看到:惯性力由四维时空曲线坐标给出。虽然黎曼几何的某些公式与四维时空的曲线坐标的运算公式在形式方面颇为相似,例如,黎曼几何中的"短程线方程"和四维时空曲线坐标中的等速直线运动方程在形式上完全一样,但两者的现实意义迥然不同。例如黎曼几何短程线方程中有一个因子在一个称为"联络",而在四维时空曲线坐标中却是"惯性力场"张量,两者不能彼此过渡。根据等效原理,与引力等效的是惯性力,因此描写引力的数学工具也应该是四维时空曲线坐标的运算而不是黎曼几何。既然如此,对广义相对论应用黎曼几何来描写引力,问一个"为什么"在所难免,不该用"你问爱因斯坦去"之类的遁词来搪塞。

事实上,对于刚才的问题,广义相对论的学者们也并不全都只会说"不要问为什么",他们中的佼佼者会给出如下回答:

鉴于

第一,惯性力与引力不能分辨,因此,只有当惯性力场与引力场完全抵消时,才能在时空中引进"洛伦兹坐标系";

第二,对于一个真实的引力场,不能找到一个加速系,其惯性力场在整个时空中完全抵消引力场,我们得出结论:"引力场所在的时空不能引进'洛伦兹坐标系'"。

另一方面,根据黎曼几何,"在弯曲时空中不能引进'洛伦兹坐标系'"。

因此,引力场所在的时空具有弯曲时空的特性。因此,广义相对论用黎曼几何来描写引力场。

这或许是我们所能期待的最满意的回答,然而这样的回答却经不起推敲,其中有太多的问题,限于篇幅,在这里我们仅仅对其中的两个主要的论据提出质疑:

第一个论据是"引力与惯性力不可分辨"。

引力的规律有两个方面:一方面是引力作用于物质的规律,另一方面是物质激发引力的规律。当引力作用于物质时,其效果与惯性力一样;但物质激发引力却并不激发惯性力,在这一点上,引力与惯性力截然不同。爱因斯坦固执地把他的"观察者"囚禁在"封闭系统"里,完全不让他知道他周围的物质激发引力的情况,另一方面却假定这位观察者能极为敏锐地感知引力或惯性力对物质的作用。诚然,经过这样精心选择的观察者确实不能分辨引力与惯性力。但是,我们能因此得出什么结论呢?如果颁布禁令:观察者只允许在夜色中见到猫,那么观察者们肯定会得出一致结论:"一切猫都是灰色的。"但这一结论并不是一条客观规律。同样,不论通过爱因斯坦精心选择的观察者有怎样的感受,都不能把"引力与惯性力不可分辨"变成一条客观规律。

另一个论据是"对于一个真实的引力场,不存在一个加速系,它的惯性力能在整个时空中完全抵消该引力场。"

人们通过举例来证明这一论据:地球的重力场在无穷远点为零,而任何加速系的惯性力在无穷远点却是有限的,甚至趋向无穷大。因此,没有一个参照系的惯性力场能抵消地球的重力场。

这种推理使我想起一句趣话:"例子并不骗人,但骗人的人常举例子。"

当人们提出"任何加速系的惯性力在无穷远点是有限的甚至趋向无穷大"的论据时,他们所考虑的加速

系总是以等加速运动的或旋转的刚性标架,但对于相对论,每一个四维时空的曲线坐标系表示一个"参照系" (诚然,这里忽略了某种不言而喻的数学条件),除了惯性系以外,每一个参照系给出一个惯性力。有谁证 明过这种一般意义下的惯性力在无穷远点总是有限的甚至趋向无穷大吗?要知道,四维时空的曲线坐标系可 以任意给定,我们想要什么样的惯性力就能有什么样的惯性力。

或许,"通过四维时空的曲线坐标系可以给出任何惯性力"这一论据还有待数学方面的严格证明,不妨暂时搁置不用。我想不会有人否认爱因斯坦的自由下落的升降机给出了一个有限的时空区域,在这个区域里爱因斯坦自己已经引进一个能抵消引力的惯性力,因此,即使我们不能在整个四维时空给出一个能抵消引力场的惯性力场的统一的分析表达式,总归可以把四维时空分成足够多的(或许是可数个)区域,并为每个区域给出一个能抵消引力的惯性力。这样,我们也就在该引力场中引进了一个能抵消引力的惯性力场(尽管这个惯性力场没有统一的分析表达式),从而对每一个引力场都可以引进能够完全抵消它的惯性力。

诚然,即使承认对每一个引力场都可以引进能够完全抵消它的惯性力,从而承认描写引力场的数学工具实际上是四维时空的曲线坐标而不是黎曼几何,爱因斯坦也完全有权采用黎曼几何来描写引力。但如果这样,等效原理与广义相对论就没有逻辑上的关联;刚好相反,只有对逻辑施以暴力,才能从等效原理过渡到广义相对论。

# 5. 爱因斯坦与广义相对论

回到爱因斯坦的命题"惯性力与引力不可分辨",或许有人问,把这一命题比喻作"一切猫都是灰色的"是不是太刻薄?其实这个比喻并没有什么特殊之处,我们可以信手拈来一堆类似的比喻。例如,如果把观察者终身囚禁在井底,这位可怜的观察者肯定会得出结论:"天与井口的大小相等。"如果在红绿色盲中挑选观察者,则观察者们将会异口同声地说:"红色与绿色不可分辨!",等等。实际上,"惯性力与引力不可分辨"并不比"一切猫都是灰色的"、"天与井口的大小相等"或者"红色与绿色不可分辨"等结论更高明,它们是同一水平的错误。只是由于爱因斯坦至高无上的权威,才使得如此低级的错误登上了"物理学规律"的大雅之堂。但是,为什么爱因斯坦会犯如此低级的错误呢?这实在是一个令人苦恼的问题!

爱因斯坦有一种特殊的思维方式,在物理学家中或许是独一无二的。我们姑且称它为"唯新"思维方式,其外在特征是主要靠个人灵感白手起家而不是靠分析、综合和整理前人已经获得的成果来思考物理学问题,其表达方式则显得艰深、晦涩而且超越逻辑。在建立狭义相对论的时期,这种思维方式显示过巨大的创造性。然而对于爱因斯坦来说,成也"唯新"、败也"唯新"。到了考虑加速系的物理学方程特别是考虑万有引力的问题时,爱因斯坦已经江郎才尽,他的"唯新"思维已经是一种非逻辑、不合逻辑乃至违反逻辑的思维方式;一言以蔽之,已经是一种错误的思维方式。

其实爱因斯坦从来就不很重视逻辑推理,他更心爱的是"新颖观念"。这是他的"唯新"思维方式的主要的表现方式。"弯曲时空"这一新颖观念实在太可爱了,用它来描述引力场是再惬意不过的。由于有了这一先入为主的意向,爱因斯坦不自觉地在这里应用了一个循环论证:一方面,因为引力场具有黎曼几何的特性,所以在引力场中不能引进一个"洛伦兹坐标系";另一方面,因为在引力场中不能引进一个"洛伦兹坐标系",所以引力场具有黎曼几何的特性。认识到这一点,当我们追溯爱因斯坦的思路时,就会省去很多烦恼

爱因斯坦一直把惯性力与引力相互抵消的"特征参照系"称为"洛伦兹坐标系",我们已经知道这一前提其实是错误的,因此他得出"引力场所在的时空具有黎曼几何的特性"这一命题的推理有双重的错误。

由于这一双重错误的推理,爱因斯坦得出了"广义协变性"这一"划时代的成果"。不幸的是,这一成 果对于相对论却是灾难性的。

"洛伦兹协变性"是相对性原理表达式,而相对性原理则是相对论的灵魂。不幸的是,在"广义协变性"中连一个"洛伦兹协变性"的原子也没有。我们被迫得出结论:所谓"广义相对论"只剩下相对论的名称,却不再有相对论的灵魂,不论黎曼几何的数学公式多么美丽,不论"弯曲时空"的观念多么神奇,它们都与相对论毫不相干。

因此,从"洛伦兹协变性"过渡到"广义协变性"实在是一次致命的飞跃,这一飞跃不仅"伤筋动骨",而且还"触及灵魂"。经过这一飞跃,本来意义下的"协变性"不是被"推广"而是被埋葬了。对于相对论,这种"推广"只不过是一次豪华的葬礼而已。

# 6. 结束语

物理学是一门实验的科学,"自然引力论"与广义相对论孰优孰劣,终究取决于实验。但是,仅仅纯粹

从逻辑的角度来看,自然引力论与广义相对论相比,已经有了明显的优势,例如:

第一,广义相对论作为一个引力场论,却没有一个"引力场张量"的概念,这无异于一个电磁场论没有"电磁场张量"的概念,怎么说都是很难令人满意的;而自然引力论则自始至终以引力场张量为中心,在这一点上,它与牛顿引力理论紧密衔接。

第二,尽管许多物理学家对广义相对论赞不绝口,但也有人略有微词,例如,波恩就说过:"广义相对论的形式复杂得可怕。"这很难说是它的优点。无论如何,广义相对论的古怪结构与物理学的其他分支格格不入是不争的事实。而自然引力论的数学结构简单,与自然界的其他场论相比并没有特别迥异之处。

第三,广义相对论的前提"惯性力与引力不可分辨"要求精心挑选观察者,说白了,它以无理地囚禁观察者为先决条件。但是难道在物理学领域里,观察者应该永远忍受自己被囚禁吗?只要有一位观察者离开他的囚禁地,看一看外面的世界,对比一下物质激发引力的规律,就可以分辨引力与惯性力了。这样,物理学家们就会认识到引力与惯性力是两种不同的力;认识到"引力势"与加速系的"度规张量"是不同的张量;认识到引力也像其他的自然力一样,是一部分物质与另一部分物质之间的相互作用,而不是一种只能通过坐标系的变化来表现自己"几何效应"。特别是,只要引力与惯性力可以分辨,人们就会认识到真正的"洛伦兹坐标系"表现的是没有惯性力的参照系,而不是惯性力与引力相互抵消的参照系(特征参照系)。这样,人们就必然放弃广义相对论而接受自然引力论。

总之,"自然引力论"遵循逻辑而广义相对论则违背逻辑。我们相信,实验的结果与逻辑的结果终究会 是一致的。

# **An Examination for Gravitation**

TAN Tianrong (Department of Physics, Qingdao University, Shandong 266071, P. R. China.)

**Abstract:** In the paper "an examination for non-inertial physics", the covariant law of inertia force is found and the physical equations in non-inertial system are given. Basing on this premise, equivalent principle is reformulated herein. As a result, a new gravitation field theory with the following characters is developed. Firstly, equivalent principle is its logical outcome; secondly, by means of the concept of "gravitation field tensor", it is connected closely with Newton's law of gravitation; thirdly, its theory structure is simple and nature, without specially different mathematical instruments in comparison with the other physical forces. Also, some logic holes of general relativity are pointed.

[Tan Tianrong. An Examination for Gravitation. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):62-66]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

**Keywords:** curve coordinates; non-inertia reference system; inertia force; Einstein; equivalent principle; gravitational field theory

# 惯性力与加速系的物理学

(一评广义相对论)

# 谭天荣

# 青岛大学物理系青岛 266071

**内容提要**:本文指出,非惯性系的物理学的数学工具是四维时空的曲线坐标运算而不是黎曼几何;在这一前提下,找到了惯性力的协变规律,从而在狭义相对论的框架内给出了惯性系的物理学方程在非惯性系的变形。正如惯性系中的物理学方程对洛伦兹变换保持不变一样,非惯性系中的物理学方程也对一种特殊的参照系变换保持不变。本文还指出,在这一工作完成之前,狭义相对论作为一个理论体系是不完整的。

[谭天荣. 惯性力与加速系的物理学. Academia Arena 2010;2(10);67-71]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

**关键词:**洛伦兹坐标系;曲线坐标;洛伦兹变换;加速系;惯性力;爱因斯坦

# 1. 引言

大家知道,牛顿第二定律不是仅仅对某一个参照系成立,而是对一系列称为"惯性系"的参照系都成立; 另一方面,只要加上惯性力,牛顿第二定律对加速系(非惯性参照系)也成立。那么,这种加上了惯性力的 牛顿第二定律仅对某一个加速系成立,还是对一系列加速系都成立呢?牛顿力学没有考虑过这个问题,狭义 相对论也没有考虑这个问题,直到广义相对论问世,这个问题才以完全变样的形式提上日程。

那么,对于牛顿力学,对于狭义相对论,这个问题是否也有答案呢?本文将证明:这个问题有答案,而且它的答案将改变我们对加速系的物理学的认识。

## 2. 曲线坐标与加速系

如果让 $x^1$ 、 $x^2$ 和 $x^3$ 表示三维空间的曲线坐标,则"矢径"**r**表成 $x^1$ 、 $x^2$ 和 $x^3$ 的函数:

$$r = r(x^1, x^2, x^3)$$
:

以弧长 s 为参变量,则任一曲线表成参变方程

次成金文月程 
$$x^1 = x^1(s)$$
,  $x^2 = x^2(s)$ ,  $x^3 = x^3(s)$ ;

把偏导符号 $\frac{\partial}{\partial x^{\lambda}}$ 略写成 $\nabla_{\lambda}$ ; 则曲线坐标的基矢表成

$$\mathbf{e}_{\lambda} = \nabla_{\lambda} \mathbf{r};$$

从而矢径的微分表成

$$d\mathbf{r} = \mathbf{e}_1 dx^1 + \mathbf{e}_2 dx^2 + \mathbf{e}_3 dx^3 = \mathbf{e}_{\mu} dx^{\mu}$$

引进曲线坐标的"共变度规张量"

$$g_{\mu\nu} \equiv \mathbf{e}_{\mu} \cdot \mathbf{e}_{\nu} \circ$$

则有

$$ds^2 = d\mathbf{r} \cdot d\mathbf{r} = \mathbf{e}_{\mu} dx^{\mu} \cdot \mathbf{e}_{\nu} dx^{\nu} = g_{\mu\nu} dx^{\mu} dx^{\nu}$$

曲线坐标的"逆变度规张量" $g^{\lambda\mu}$ 由方程组 $g^{\lambda\mu}g_{\mu\nu}=\delta^{\lambda}_{\nu}$ 定义,对于常用的球面坐标和柱面坐标,这两种度规张量都具有对角线的形式。

对于给定的 $\mu$ 和 $\nu$ ,用 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 表示矢量 $\nabla_{\nu}e_{\mu}$ 的坐标,则有

$$\nabla_{\mu} \mathbf{e}_{\nu} = \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \mathbf{e}_{\lambda}$$

$$\nabla_{\lambda} g_{\mu\nu} = \Gamma_{\mu\lambda\nu} + \Gamma_{\nu\lambda\mu} \circ \tag{1}$$

根据基矢的定义,有

$$\nabla_{\mu} \mathbf{e}_{\nu} = \nabla_{\nu} \mathbf{e}_{\mu \circ}$$

从而

$$\Gamma^{\lambda}_{uv} = \Gamma^{\lambda}_{vu} \circ \tag{2}$$

(1) 式与(2) 式给出

$$\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} g^{\lambda\rho} (\nabla_{\mu} g_{\nu\rho} + \nabla_{\nu} g_{\rho\mu} - \nabla_{\rho} g_{\mu\nu})_{\circ}$$
 (3)

该式把符号Γ<sup>λ</sup><sub>uv</sub>表成度规张量的偏导。

曲线的切线方向矢量是

$$\kappa = \frac{d\mathbf{r}}{ds} = \mathbf{e}_{\mu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{ds}$$

对于直线, 切线的方向矢量保持不变:  $\frac{d\mathbf{k}}{ds} = 0$ , 从而有

$$0 \; = \; \frac{d\boldsymbol{\kappa}}{ds} \; = \; \frac{d}{ds} \, (\boldsymbol{e}_{\mu} \, \frac{dx^{\mu}}{ds}) \; = \; \boldsymbol{e}_{\lambda} (\frac{d^2x^{\lambda}}{ds^2} \; + \; \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\;\;\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{ds} \, \frac{dx^{\nu}}{ds})_{\circ} \label{eq:delta_scale}$$

于是在给定的曲线坐标中, 一条直线满足微分方程

$$\frac{d^2x^{\lambda}}{ds^2} + \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{ds} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{ds} = 0.$$
 (4)

如果把上面诸方程中的张量或符号中的指标加上一个时间坐标  $\mathbf{x}^0$ ,再用固有时 $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ 的微分代替弧长的微分  $\mathbf{s}$ ,则得到四维时空的曲线坐标的一组对应的公式。这组公式在形式上与三维空间的曲线坐标的公式完全一样,但表现着全新的内容。

例如,(4)式原是一条直线在三维空间曲线坐标下的微分方程,对于四维时空,它被改写为

$$\frac{d^2x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} + \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau} = 0, \qquad (5)$$

表示加速系中的一个质点的"等速直线运动"。

另一方面,四维时空的曲线坐标运算的某些公式与黎曼几何的公式颇有一些相似,例如,(5)式在黎曼几何中是"短程线方程"。但两者物理意义却迥然不同,不能彼此过渡。

#### 3. 相对论中的惯性力

对于牛顿力学, "参照系"仅仅指刚性标架,而"加速系"则是指作加速运动的刚性标架。

对于相对论, "参照系"的概念比牛顿力学的更丰富多彩: 一个四维时空的曲线坐标系就表示一个"参照系"。四维时空的曲线坐标系可以分成两类,一类是洛伦兹坐标系(惯性系,再加上对三维空间取笛卡尔坐标系); 另一类是非洛伦兹坐标系(加速系,或者对三维空间取曲线坐标系;一般地说是两者兼而有之)。下面,按照习惯,如果不特别声明,我们把"惯性系"等同于"洛伦兹坐标系",而"加速系"则等同于"非洛伦兹坐标系"。

在相对论中,除了作加速运动的刚性标架以外,还有其它形形色色的"加速系"。例如,在童话电影《格列佛游记》里,当主人翁进入大人国时,其身材变小,反之,当他进入小人国时,其身材变大,这种坐标尺度的放大与缩小的过程,也给出一种加速系。

对于惯性系,表示相对论形式的牛顿第二定律的方程是

$$m_0 \frac{d^2 x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} = F^{\lambda},$$

其中  $F^{\lambda}$ 的指标 $\lambda$ 遍历 0、1、2、3。 $F^{1}$ 、 $F^{2}$ 和  $F^{3}$ 是经过改写的"力", $F^{0}$ 是经过改写的"功率"。 $m_{0}$ 是质点的静止质量,τ是固有时, $x^{0}$ 是时间坐标而  $x^{1}$ 、 $x^{2}$  和  $x^{3}$ 是三维空间的笛卡尔坐标。以后我们说的牛顿第二定律就是指这个方程。

如果把(5)式理解为加速系中的一个质点的"等速直线运动"方程,将该式两边乘以质点的静止质量  $m_0$  并移项,得到

$$m_0 \frac{d^2 x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} = -m_0 \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau}.$$

$$K^{\lambda} \equiv -m_0 \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau}, \tag{6}$$

则有

$$m_0 \frac{d^2 x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} \, = \, K^{\lambda} \, .$$

这个方程在形式上与相对论形式的牛顿第二定律完全一样,其中  $K^1$ 、 $K^2$ 和  $K^3$ 是经过改写的"惯性力", $K^0$ 是经过改写的"惯性功率"。

现在我们问:"惯性力是不是矢量?"

或许有人说,惯性力有大小有方向,当然是矢量!这个回答没错,但答非所问。

相对论的基本数学工具是张量分析,而张量分析立足于"参照系变换"。对于相对论,一个四维时空的曲线坐标的变换表示一个"参照系变换",全体参照系变换组成一个"群",记作"H 群",通常说的"参照系变换群"是指"H 群"的一个"子群"。从一个惯性系变换到另一个惯性系的参照系变换称为"洛伦兹变换",全体洛伦兹变换组成"洛伦兹变换群",它也是"H 群"的一个子群。

大家知道,相对论意义下的力

$$\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{F}^{\lambda} \mathbf{e}_{\lambda}$$

对洛伦兹变换保持不变,从而其坐标 F<sup>A</sup>对于洛伦兹变换是协变的,在这种意义下,它是一个四维矢量。

同样,对于惯性力,我们可以给出如下定义: 当一个加速系变换到另一个加速系时,四维时空的基矢  $\mathbf{e}_{\lambda}$  和 (6) 式给出的惯性力的坐标  $\mathbf{K}^{\lambda}$ 都会相应地改变。如果对于每一个相对论意义下的惯性力

$$\mathbf{K} = \mathbf{K}^{\lambda} \mathbf{e}_{\lambda},$$

存在一组参照系变换,对于其中的每一个变换,惯性力 K 保持不变,从而惯性力的坐标  $K^{\lambda}$ 是"协变"的,则惯性力就是矢量。

更一般地说,设 G 是一个"参照系变换群",而某一符号对于变换群 G 中的每一个变换都具有协变性,则称该符号表示的对象为变换群 G 的"不变量"。按照这一规定,相对论意义下的力 F 是"洛伦兹变换群"的不变量,正是在这种意义下它是一个矢量。同样,如果对于每一个惯性力,总能找到一个以它为不变量的参照系变换群,则惯性力就是矢量。

#### 4. 惯性力是矢量

那么,惯性力到底是不是矢量呢?回答是肯定的。

首先举一个牛顿力学的例子,表明一个给定的惯性力对于某一组参照系变换保持不变。

考虑一个爱因斯坦的"升降机",它相对地面自由下落。下面,我们把地面看作惯性系,从而该升降机是一个加速系,记作 $\alpha$ ,其中的一位乘客a感受到一个惯性力,记作 $K_{\alpha}$ 。另一方面,设乘客a的质量m,重力加速度为g,取铅直向上的方向为正,则a所受的重力为-mg。在升降机自由下落时,a所受的惯性力与重力相互抵消,从而有 $K_{\alpha}=mg$ 。再考虑一座相对地面作等速直线运动的大楼(据说,这是可以实现的),大楼里也有一个自由下落的升降机 $\beta$ ,它也一个加速系。如果乘客a进入升降机 $\beta$ ,他也会感受到一个惯性力 $K_{\beta}$ 。根据牛顿力学,同样有 $K_{\beta}=mg$ 。于是, $K_{\beta}=K_{\alpha}$ 。

用ξ表示"地面",η表示"大楼",则ξ和η是两个惯性系。再用R表示从地面到升降机 $\alpha$ 的参照系变换,则  $\alpha$  = Rξ。R同时也把"大楼"变换到升降机 $\beta$ ,从而  $\beta$  = Rη。上面的结论"乘客a在这两个升降机中所感受的惯性力相同",即" $K_{\beta}$  =  $K_{\alpha}$ ",可以推广成为如下命题:

A. 如果ξ和η是两个惯性系,而 R 是一个把惯性系变换到加速系的参照系变换,则在从加速系 Rξ到 加速系 Rη参照系变换中,惯性力保持不变。

在命题A中,用S表示把惯性系ξ变换到惯性系 $\eta$ 的伽利略变换:  $\eta = S\xi$ ; 再引进 $\alpha = R\xi$ ,  $\beta = R\eta$ , 并用R'表示R的逆变换,从而把 $\alpha = R\xi$ 表成 $\xi = R$ ' $\alpha$ ,则有

$$\beta = R\eta = RS\xi = RSR'\alpha$$
.

在这里,RSR'是一个由 R'、S 和 R 三个参照系变换给出的"合成参照系变换",它把加速系α变换到加速系β。 经过这一参照系变换,惯性力保持不变。这样,命题 A 进一步表成

B. 如果 R 是一个参照系变换,它把某一惯性系变换到加速系 $\alpha$ ,而 S 是一从惯性系到惯性系的参照系变换,则加速系 $\alpha$ 的惯性力对于合成参照系变换 RSR'保持不变(其中 R'表示 R 的逆变换)。现在,我们回到相对论。在这里,命题 B 表成:

C. 设 R 是把某一惯性系变换到某一加速系 $\alpha$ 的非洛伦兹变换(是参照系变换,但不是洛伦兹变换): 而 S 是一洛伦兹变换,则加速系α的惯性力对于参照系变换 RSR'保持不变。

设ξ和 $\eta$ 是两个惯性系,从惯性系ξ到惯性系 $\eta$ 的洛伦兹变换记作 S。再考虑某一非洛伦兹变换 R(属于 H群,但不属于洛伦兹变换群),它把E变换到加速系 $\alpha$ ;把n变换到加速系B,则从加速系 $\alpha$ 到加速系B的参照系 变换是 RSR', 我们称它为"准洛伦兹变换"。固定 R, 当 S 遍历整个洛仑兹变换群时, 形如 RSR'的参照系 变换形成一个参照系变换群,我们称它为"准洛伦兹变换群",或更确切地称它为"由R生成的准洛伦兹变 换群"。

设ξ和η是两个惯性系而ζ是一个加速系,则从ξ到ζ和从η到ζ是不同的非洛伦兹变换,但它们生成同一个 准洛伦兹变换群  $G_r$ 。因此,一个加速系 $\xi$ 对应唯一的准洛伦兹变换群  $G_r$ 。一个惯性力对应一个确定的加速系, 因此一个惯性力也对应唯一的准洛伦兹变换群。

根据命题 C,加速系 $\zeta$ 所对应的惯性力  $\mathbf{K}_c$ 是加速系 $\zeta$ 所对应的准洛伦兹变换群  $\mathbf{G}_c$ 的不变量。正是在这种 意义下,(相对论意义下的)惯性力是矢量。

如果一个物理量在洛伦兹变换下保持不变,则我们说其坐标具有"洛伦兹协变性";同样,因为惯性力 在自己对应的准洛伦兹变换下保持不变,在这种意义下,我们说惯性力的坐标具有"准洛伦兹协变性"。

我们所考察的加速系 $\zeta$ 对应的惯性力的表达式是(6)式,其中的一个因子 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{nv}$ 表现一个力场的特征,我们 称该力场为"惯性力场"。因此,加速系č还对应一个惯性力场,它也是变换群Gz的不变量,从而也是一个张 量,我们称它为"惯性力场(强度)张量"。还有,加速系ζ的"度规张量"之所以是张量,也是因为它是变 换群Gc的不变量。

回到(3)式,它表示一个加速系的惯性力场张量 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{uv}$ 与该加速系的度规  $g_{uv}$ 之间的关系。 这一切都与黎曼几何无关。

#### 加速系的物理学方程

相对论刚刚建成,就提出了一个问题:"对于加速系,相对论形式下的物理学方程表成什么形式?"所 谓"时钟佯谬"的提出更显示这个问题的解决已经迫不及待。不幸的是,在过去的一个世纪里,由于种种原 因,这一问题的解决被耽误了,以致今天我不得不把它当作新问题提出来。在这里,我先考察一个例子。

当一个带电 e 静止质量为  $m_0$  的点电荷置于电磁场  $F^{\lambda\mu}$ 中时,相对论形式的牛顿第二定律表成

$$m_0 \frac{d^2 x^\lambda}{d\tau^2} = e F^{\lambda\mu} \frac{dx^\mu}{d\tau} \ . \eqno(7)$$

在(7)式中,所有的物理量都是洛伦兹变换群的不变量,从而(7)式是一个张量方程。

设有加速系
$$\zeta$$
,其对应的准洛伦兹变换群是  $G_{\zeta}$ ,其惯性力场是 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\ \mu\nu}$ 。在参照系 $\zeta$ 中,(7)式转化为方程 
$$m_0 \frac{d^2 x^{\lambda}}{d\tau^2} = e F^{\lambda\mu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} - m_0 \Gamma^{\lambda}_{\ \mu\nu} \frac{dx^{\mu}}{d\tau} \frac{dx^{\nu}}{d\tau}. \tag{8}$$

在 (8) 式中,不仅 $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\mu\nu}$ 是变换群  $G_c$ 的不变量,而且其他物理量 ( 例如  $F^{\lambda\mu})$  也都是变换群  $G_c$ 的不变量,从而 (8)式作为变换群  $G_r$ 的诸不变量之间的关系,仍然是一个张量方程。但它与(7)式相比有了两点改变:第一,增 添了一项惯性力; 第二, 张量的协变性改变了, 从"洛伦兹协变性"变成了"准洛伦兹协变性"。

大家知道,面对同一个问题,爱因斯坦给出了一个迥然不同的答案:关键的区别是,他用"广义协变性" 取代"准洛伦兹协变性"来表现加速系的物理学方程的协变性。这两种协变性有如下区别:

第一,广义协变性是洛伦兹协变性的推广,而准洛伦兹协变性则是洛伦兹协变性的变形。如果非洛伦兹 变换 R 无限接近恒等变换,则在洛伦兹变换 RSR'无限接近于洛伦兹变换 S,因此从洛伦兹协变性可连续地 过渡到准洛伦兹协变性,而从洛伦兹协变性过渡到广义协变性则没有这种连续性。

第二, (3) 式给出的符号  $\Gamma^{\lambda}_{\ \ uv}$ 表示加速系物理学中的一个最关键的物理量。作为四维时空的曲线坐标系 的一个范畴,它是"惯性力场张量",具有准洛伦兹协变性。而同一符号在黎曼几何中称为"联络",它也是 一个举足轻重的范畴,却并不是一个张量,不具有广义协变性。

第三,"准洛伦兹协变性"的概念可以离开引力场的概念单独定义,而广义协变性却与引力场不可分离。 为什么爱因斯坦没有找到"准洛伦兹协变性"呢?这与其说是一个"智力"问题倒不如说是一个"爱 好"问题。爱因斯坦偏爱"新颖观念",由于这种偏爱他建立了光子论;由于这种偏爱他试图建立"统一场 论";还是由于这种偏爱,在处理加速系的物理学问题时,他采用了严谨而又美丽的"黎曼几何",从而引 讲了"弯曲时空"这一匪夷所思的观念。

从"洛伦兹协变性"到"准洛伦兹协变性"是一条凡人的思路,一条保守的、传统的、循规蹈矩的思路;

而从"洛伦兹协变性"到"广义协变性"则是一条天才的思路,一条打破常规、出奇制胜、独辟蹊径的思路。如果"以成败论英雄",则爱因斯坦这条思路找对了。从 1919 年起爱因斯坦成了全世界家喻户晓的名人,有史以来,还没有第二位物理学家享受这样的殊荣。然而又有谁知道,物理学为此付出了怎样的代价!

#### 6. 结束语

按照爱因斯坦的意见,狭义相对论只给出惯性系的物理学方程,一旦涉及加速系时就必须应用广义相对论,从而必须应用"等效原理"与"广义协变性原理"。从数理科学的一般观点来看,像这样理解的狭义相对论是不完整的。

大家知道:一个参照系只要对惯性系稍有偏离,就成了加速系。这一事实表明:惯性系与加速系之间的关系,类似于数轴上的一个点与它的"邻域"之间的关系。在数学中,为了表现一个函数在某一点的行为,孤立地给出该函数在这个点的取值是不够的,只有同时给出该函数在这一点的"邻域"的取值,对这个函数在该点的行为的描写才是完整的。同样,一个物理学理论仅仅孤立地给出惯性系的运动方程也是不够的,还需要同时给出加速系的运动方程。反过来说:狭义相对论作为一个完整的理论体系,应该不仅给出能惯性系的物理学方程,还能同时给出这种方程在加速系的变形,而不用借助于该理论以外的"原理"。

因此,在完成了本文的工作之前,狭义相对论还不是一个完整的理论体系。

### **Inertial force and Non-inertial System Physics**

TAN Tianrong (Department of Physics, Qingdao University, Shandong 266071, P. R. China.)

**Abstract:** It is pointed that the mathematical means of non-inertial system is the curve coordinate of four-dimensional time-space instead of Riemannian geometry. Starting from this premise, the covariant law of inertia force is found; as a result, the variance form of physical equations for non-inertial system is given. Just as physical equations for inertial system remain covariant for Lorentz transformations, those for non-inertial system remain covariant for a kind of new reference transformations. Before this work being to success, special relativity as a theory system is incomplete.

[TAN Tianrong. Inertial force and Non-inertial System Physics. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):67-71]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

**Keywords:** curve coordinates; non-inertia reference system; Lorentz transformation; inertia force; Lorentz coordinates; Einstein

#### **Laws of Nature: Genesis and Enforcement**

Dr Javed Jamil\*

#### doctorforu123@yahoo.com, javedjamil@rediffmail.com

**Abstract:** According to the news reports, the eminent British theoretical physicist Stephen Hawking argues in a new book that 'God did not create the universe and the "Big Bang" was an inevitable consequence of the laws of physics. In "The Grand Design," co-authored with U.S. physicist Leonard Mlodinow, Hawking says a new series of theories made a creator of the universe redundant, according to the Times newspaper which published extracts on Thursday. "Because there is a law such as gravity, the universe can and will create itself from nothing. Spontaneous creation is the reason there is something rather than nothing, why the universe exists, why we exist," Hawking writes. "It is not necessary to invoke God to light the blue touch paper and set the universe going." It is unfortunate that the opposition to the existence of God has become such a precondition for the think-tank of the New World Order that scientists who oppose God are being given all the attention, and those that argue against atheism are normally ignored. Hawking says that the creation of the universe is the automatic consequence of the laws of nature. But the question arises: What is the genesis of these laws and how they are being enforced. In my paper, I will discuss the questions related to Genesis and Enforcement of laws.

Academia Arena 2010;2(10):72-79]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: Laws of Nature, General Theory of Relativity, Einsteinianism

Physics tells us that whatever is present in the universe is governed by certain laws, known as laws of nature. It is these laws and their combinations that are responsible for the Order in the universe, and it is the understanding of these laws that makes predictions possible; it is also the exactness of these laws that makes it possible to have an opinion about the past. What is beyond doubt about laws now is that these laws are the same everywhere in the universe; and they have been the same throughout the history of the universe; right from the beginning of the "creation", which is considered to have been at the Big Bang Singularity. If these laws are the same and are in place since the very beginning of the Big Bang, it follows that while the universe evolved from a Singularity to the present state and took a long time to evolve, the Laws of Nature appeared instantly without a delay and started governing the evolution of the universe right from the word "go". This means that the laws of the universe had no time to evolve. Who then prepared the set of laws that would lead to the creation of the universe the way it happened? To prepare a set of laws requires

- (1) Thorough knowledge of the purpose for which they are being made,
- (2) The matter and the regions these laws are going to govern and
  - (3) The ways they are going to be enforced.

While the social laws are enacted for a society or community that already exists; and the problems of which are known, what is unique about physical laws of nature is that they were decided upon before the creation of the system that these laws were going to govern. The present theory of Physics fails to describe not only the genesis of the laws of nature but also makes it impossible to understand how these laws are being enforced successfully without failure in a massive universe. We will discuss these issues in the present paper. We will see that the current theory of Physics dominated by Einsteinianism is a total failure in understanding the genesis and enforcement of the laws of physics and must therefore be abandoned without delay.

Light Speed Barrier: the greatest impediment in understanding the genesis and enforcement of Laws of Physics.

In nineteenth Century, Newton ruled; most of the twentieth century and onwards has been ruled by Einstein. His special and general theories of relativity and the models of the origin of the universe based on his theories have almost become a religion with physicists. Despite the fact that his light-speed barrier created innumerable problems – mathematical, physical as well as philosophical, and despite the fact that there are mounting evidences against this barrier and despite the fact that the whole branch of Ouantum mechanics is regarded non-local, Einsteinianism rules the Physics. Einsteinianism has become a type of physico-religion, which must rule whatever the nature of the evidences. If any facts apparently seem to be violating the Einsteinian limits, ways must be found out so that they conform to them. My earlier article, "Einsteinianism: Time to Abandon this Physico-Religion" examines the problems related

with Einsteinianism and suggests that time has now arrived when this needs to be challenged and confronted. It also presents a formula that can be used for gamma factor instead of the formula Einstein developed based on Lorentz contraction; this will make light-speed stable, not constant. To understand the problem related to genesis and enforcement of laws of physics, I will have to reproduce certain portions from the previous paper.

"Light cannot be allowed to adorn divinity, which turns its small speed into an infinite one for all practical purposes. Light-speed barrier is an artificial barrier erected by Einstein's mind. Physicists have unfortunately turned this barrier into a wall that cannot be scaled. This is despite the accumulating evidences at the microscopic as well as the macroscopic level pointing to the brittle nature of the foundation of this wall. To talk of light-speed as the fastest possible speed is as to talk in the tenth century of the speed of the horse being the fastest achievable speed on the earth. And Einstein cannot be allowed to don the role of Final Prophet whose Word cannot be challenged or changed.

"The current state of the knowledge of universe rests primarily on the two important branches: Classical Mechanics (that includes Newtonian Mechanics, Einstein's theories of relativity and Hubble's cosmology) and Quantum Mechanics. Philosophically, the two often seem to be at loggerheads, though both of them have been of huge practical importance. Despite the challenges posed by the Quantum Mechanics to Einsteinian and other classical ideas, the influence of Einstein remains overpowering in the overall scenario. He remains the unchallenged genius of the modern Physics. ... His theories gave a quantum jump to the knowledge of the universe. But there was one principle that he was never ready to part with, the principle of the constancy of light-speed.

"The empirical "constancy" of light-speed observed by scientists led Einstein to declare that light-speed was indeed "constant", meaning it cannot change (at least in vacuum) under any circumstances, and there cannot be any speed beyond the speed of light. The whole foundation of Physics has unfortunately relied too heavily on Einstein's obsession for light. It was this obsessive fascination combined with his brilliance that he was able to influence almost every theory of physics so that it did not violate the barrier of light-speed. It will be explained below how Einstein manufactured his ideas about light-constancy and tried to fit everything into it. In doing so, he consciously or unconsciously tried to turn the minibus of light-speed barrier into an omnibus that would absorb the whole universe.

"Even from an empirical point of view, this is extremely difficult to believe that a small speed like that of light can be of any help in understanding the functioning of the universe. The universe is so vast that in its backdrop, the light-speed is nothing but mere crawl. To keep the universe functioning the way it is functioning, much speedier ways of communication would be needed.

"It is also interesting to note that Einstein's First Postulate says that physical laws in all the coordinate systems are the same. This postulate in itself is the cause of contradiction for the postulate of lightspeed constancy, as how so vastly distant co-ordinate systems can regularly communicate to know about these laws and keep following them without fail. It can be argued that these laws are the same because they all had their origin in the Big Bang. But soon after the Big Bang they got separated by huge distances, making most of them unable to communicate with one another. Why then do the same laws prevail everywhere in the universe? We know from our daily experiences that the enforcement of law requires a constant vigil in the whole land. What then, makes the matter so obedient all over the universe? This question will also be discussed later in another context. The fact however remains that Einstein's two postulates of special theory of relativity are contradictory to one another.

"The history of modern Physics is witness to how Einstein used his idea of light-speed barrier to bulldoze almost every other theory; how he constructed theories and formulas to adjust almost every mechanism to its demands. One mistake of light-speed barrier led to hundreds of errors being accepted by the community of Physicists. This is another matter that Einstein and the posterity of physicists did so considering that the falsehood of light-speed barrier was the truth that has to be accepted at all costs."

The problems that Einsteinian concepts pose are numerous. The Chief ones are:

#### **Problem of Photon Mass.**

In spite of the hullabaloo on the photon mass, the truth remains that a particle is a particle only because it has a size and a mass. Just to make it adjust to the demands of a theory that puts limit on the highest speed, the size and mass of a particle cannot be reduced to zero. If the gamma factor of the special theory holds true, even the size of the photon at the light speed has to be zero, which mathematically means the size of a photon at rest must be infinite. This is because with the increase of velocity, the size contracts leading to a zero size at the light-speed. It is not only the question of mass but

also the question of the size of photon, which needs attention. The wavelength too of photon must become zero, if Einstein's gamma factor holds true. To take shelter in the empirical truth for supporting this is deplorable.

### Gravity has to change to adjust to the demands of Gamma

General Theory was surely a clever attempt to turn the supposed universal constant of light speed into an eternal and ubiquitous reality. Despite the presentation of GTR a long time back, that is about 85 years, the theory still remains incomplete and untested.

#### The Question of locality in Quantum Mechanics

Ouantum mechanics owe its existence among others to Einstein. Yet Einstein did not accept it as a complete theory, because it violated his idea of locality emanating from his universal constant of light-speed that puts a limit on any information travelling faster than light. Locality is a powerful concept-In fact, regarded by many as the most powerful--of Physics that denies action at a distance, or what is called as "spooky action at distance". Despite the fact that nonlocality is now regarded as consistent with quantum mechanics, Einstein's influence on physics is such that the fundamental idea of the light-speed barrier has not been dropped. Physicists do not take quantum physics as enough evidence against the theory of special relativity. Einstein was right in believing that instantaneity is something that cannot be acceptable; for it will demolish the very foundations of determinism. If determinism is demolished, causality will have no meaning. The future will then become probabilistic and chaotic rather than deterministic.

#### Infinities in Einstein's theory a permanent feature

Thus Einstein's gamma compels us to believe that despite the commonly known fact that mass and volume are basic properties of matter, particles can exist, with zero mass or zero volume. Thus as soon as a body gets to the speed of light, its size would become zero. Zero size does not mean it has ceased to exist but only that it exists without any size. And still more interesting is the declaration that the body with zero volume has infinite mass. Thus it also means a certain thing has almost ceased to exist in space-time, and yet has infinite mass, which is detectable in space-time. This formula has led scientists to believe there are many particles that do have zero mass. In fact, in the wake of Einstein's general theory of relativity, the universe has become full of infinities. The world is said to have begun at a Big Bang singularity at which space-time was infinitely curved meaning again it had zero volume and infinite mass. Not only did the universe begin at infinity and could end at singularity according to one section of Physicists, stars too would collapse to form infinities. Thus infinities that philosophically are divine properties have, in the modern theory of physics, become unavoidable in a universe filled with finites. In brief, the world is supposed to have begun with infinities (at both ends that is, at zero volume and infinite mass) and may also end at infinity or a finite universe having innumerable infinities.

We have to build a theoretical structure that does not associate infinities with the objects of the universe. If a body moves, it has to move with other than zero velocity; if a particle has to exist, it must have some mass and some volume, even if it were extremely small. To determine the masses and volume of a certain existing particle may be practically impossible, but, theoretically, it has to have mass and volume, howsoever small. From Einstein's general theory of relativity, it can be inferred that mass and volume are not fundamental properties of the matter. Thus even infinite masses can occur at Big Bang and black hole singularities without volumes. Is it not surprising that, at the singularities, the matter has been destroyed in terms of its volume, but is very much in existence as far as its mass is concerned? This half death of the matter is one of the most audacious and repugnant results of the general theory of relativity, which has not been convincingly answered by other theories as well.

#### Problem related to Origin of the Universe

The models of the origin of the universe that have been proposed time and again by various physicists too were influenced by Einstein's ideas so much that despite huge problems in the development of these models, the basic principle of the light-speed barrier was not given up. This is another matter that some physicists have tried to explain the problems by proposing that, in the initial phase of inflationary expansion, which lasted a very small fragment of a second, the light speed was faster than its speed today on the account of the extraordinary energy available then

It was Einstein's theory of General Relativity (along with Hubble's idea of the expanding universe), which has chiefly been responsible for the belief that the universe began from a singularity of infinite mass and energy density, and almost zero volume. It was mainly his ideas and his equations that compelled physicists to think of the universe beginning at a point where all the present laws break down. It is ironical to believe that present laws were derived from a situation where these laws had no tangible or perceptible existence. Despite many attempts to

answer it, the question still remains unconvincingly answered. The universe began at singularity with a huge explosion called Big Bang. This huge explosion was not an explosion we understand in our routine life. This was not an explosion in space but of it. The size of the universe at 10-12 seconds was as small as 10-17 metres. At the instant of singularity, the size was 10-33 centimetre. The initial universe was compressed into a state of extremely high density estimated to be about 1090 kg/cc (kilograms per cubic centimetre) and extraordinary temperatures, perhaps in excess of 1032 °K. Obviously, both of these were without any counterpart in the presently observed Universe. And thanks to the results of the mathematical puzzles based on the Einstein's and other equations huge transformations in the universe occurred within the first second, when the universe had already expanded to a diameter of about 1 to 10 light years., its density had decreased to 1010kg/cc, and the temperature had dropped to 1010 K. What brought these huge changes so quickly still remains largely poorly understood. The problem of Horizon Paradox still haunts the scientists because it is extremely difficult to fathom how the portions of the universe that could not have communicated on account of the limit on the speed of communication can possess similar properties, have the same temperature and look the same.

Despite its successes, the Standard Model has plenty of known problems. In the June 2003 issue of Scientific American, in an article, captioned, "The Dawn of Physics beyond the Standard Model," Gordon Kane has listed ten theoretical problems:

- 1. It (the standard model) implies a tremendous concentration of energy, even in the emptiest regions of space. This so-called vacuum energy would have either quickly curled up the universe long ago or expanded it to a much greater size.
- 2. The expansion of the universe is accelerating, and this cannot be explained by the standard model.
- 3. There is reason to believe that in the first fraction of a second of the Big Bang, the universe went through a period of extremely rapid expansion called inflation. The fields responsible for inflation cannot be those of the Standard Model.
- 4. If the universe began as a huge burst of energy, it should have evolved into equal parts of matter and anti-matter. This did not happen. The universe is matter. The Standard Model cannot explain this.
- 5. About a quarter of the universe is invisible cold dark matter that cannot be particles of the Standard Model.
- 6. In the Standard Model, interactions with the Higgs field cause particles to have mass. The Standard Model cannot explain the form these interactions must take.

7. Quantum corrections apparently make the Higgs boson mass huge, which would make all particle masses huge, which is obviously not the case.

- 8. The Standard Model cannot include gravity, because it does not have the same structure as the other three forces.
- 9. The values of the masses of particles cannot be explained by the Standard Model.
- 10. There are 3 generations of particles. The Standard Model cannot explain why there is more than 1 generation."

#### Quasars

Ouasars have become controversial on account of the extraordinary redshift they show. The present day understanding of the quasars shows that (I) they are not necessarily star-like and have complex structures, (2) though many of them are radio sources, all of them are not, and (3) the high red-shift is the continuing hallmark of the quasars. Till now, the highest red-shift available is 3.78. On the basis of the understanding of the Doppler shift, any red-shift over that of 1.00 means a faster than light-speed velocity of the source, A value of 2.00 would mean a relative speed of double the light speed. This would clearly mean that they are moving at much higher speeds than the light. But again, Einstein's ghost scared the cosmologists who started finding out alternative explanations for this high redshift. Obviously, these attempts have not been convincing. These have led to still bigger complications. The controversy is summed up in "The Universe of Motion" by Dewey B. Larson. He says:

" While the high redshift problem was circumvented in conventional astronomical thought by this sleight-of-hand performance with the relativity mathematics, the accompanying distanceenergy problem has been more recalcitrant, and has resisted all attempts to resolve it, or to evade it. the quasars are at cosmological distances—that is, the distances corresponding to the redshifts on the assumption that they are ordinary recession redshifts—then the amount of energy that they are emitting is far too great to be explained by any known energy generation process, or even any plausible speculative process. On the other hand, if the energies are reduced to credible levels by assuming that the quasars are less distant, then conventional science has no explanation for the large redshifts......Obviously something has to give. One or the other of these two limiting assumptions has to be abandoned. Either there are hitherto undiscovered processes that generate vastly more energy than any process now known, or there are hitherto unknown

factors that increase the quasar redshifts far beyond the normal recession values."

#### **Structural Level Problems**

There are many problems at the structural level also, which the standard model of the origin of the universe cannot fully explain. The universe is made up of billion of galaxies, some of which are smaller and some greater than ours. However, what amazes cosmologists is that most of the universe is devoid of any luminous matter, and is formed of gigantic empty spaces. It is hard to find how these gigantic voids were formed and whether these voids are empty. One thought is that the universe may contain just one gigantic void in which large superclusters and clusters are floating. The other possibility is that superclusters form one gigantic chain within one gigantic void so that it is possible to traverse through one chain to the other. The third possibility is that galaxies cluster to form sheets separating vast regions of empty space just as soap filaments and bubbles formed out of them. These structural features are also not easily explainable by the Big Bang models. If the universe started from a highly dense singularity, what caused these voids to appear? At the same time there are structures like Great Wall, which is a gigantic structure of up to at least 100-200 Mpc scales. The truth is that these structures and more generally the formation of galaxies have been puzzling scientists, because it is difficult to imagine these on the basis of the Big Bang models.

#### **Quantum Mechanics**

Quantum Mechanics led to huge debates, as it challenged many of the previously held philosophical views. Uncertainty principle was presented as representative of the objective uncertainty of nature. It was advocated that one cannot know the truth of nature, as uncertainty is inherent in nature. This and the wave-function-collapse, the formulation of Bell's inequalities and subsequent evidences that they are violated caused an enormous controversy over determinism. It was argued that Quantum Mechanics proved the indeterministic nature of nature, a position that was aggressively opposed by a number of scientists, led by Einstein. He once wrote to Born,

"The quantum theory provokes in me quite similar sensations as in you. One ought really to be ashamed of the successes, as they are obtained with the help of the Jesuitic rule: 'One hand must not know what the other does.'"

It is clear from the above sentence that Einstein used to be ashamed of the successes of any theories that did not satisfy his positions, which were mostly the outcome of his light-speed barrier.

i. The great debate reached a flash point in Copenhagen Interoperation with Bohr being its chief architect.

In the Copenhagen Interpretation, it can be argued that Quantum Mechanics is considered completely separate. Copenhagen Interoperation was in fact a work of the ideology of Bohr, who went on to say:

"There is no quantum world. There is only abstract quantum physical description. It is wrong to think that the task of physics is to find out how nature is. Physics concerns what we can say about nature."

Einstein was disillusioned with Quantum Mechanics, as he did not like the idea of abandoning the Locality, Causality and Determinism. He also tried to support his ideas through an experiment, called EPR Paradox. But the idea of locality was constantly troubling the quantum physics. Bell's theorem, published in 1964, braved a very strong challenge to the locality. Bell proved that the idea of locality was not compatible with the Quantum Mechanics, as there seems to be a faster than light influence on very distant events.

Locality is a constant thorn in the flesh of QM, and many believe the two are not compatible with each other. Rowbottom says:

"The choice to abandon locality, which I indeed support, is based upon 'weighing up' the relative advantages of each macroscopic prejudice, respectively, and reaching the conclusion that locality will require the least intuitive effort to sacrifice. Non-locality is also the most appealing choice because of the work which has already been done in this direction, by de Broglie-Bohm."

There cannot be a more preposterous logic than that the Ouantum Mechanics demonstrates a detachment between the microscopic and the macroscopic worlds. The crossroads where the present physics seems to be stuck at the moment leaves an unmistakable impression that the two are separate indeed. If the Ouantum Mechanics were accepted as different from the macroscopic world, it would only mean that our world has two faces; the outer and greater picture is entirely different from the inner and smaller picture. This is like saying that a living being is totally different from its cells. The problems we face today in reconciling the two is basically the result of the philosophically unfounded principle of locality, which has outlived its utility as a genuine limiting principle in the physical world. Furthermore, the set of laws in the larger world cannot be different from the set of laws governing the inside of its constituents. This is another matter that the significance of different laws assumes different proportions at different levels. The genes functioning within the cells have no parallel in the macroscopic

world. But this does not make cells a different world from the world of living beings. Bohm's endeavours to bring in the two closer, is admirable, but he has not succeeded in presenting a plausible ground for his ideas of Quantum Potential and Implicate Order. What brings this Implicate Order into action?

#### **Enforcement of Laws: How?**

What are laws? Aronson, Harré, and Way (1994) say:

"Laws are invariant relations between properties. We have argued that judgements of verisimilitude are based on similarity comparisons between the type of object referred to by a scientist and the actual type of the corresponding object in nature. The relative verisimilitude of laws can be thought of in the same way, namely as the degree to which the relationships between properties depicted in relevant theories resemble the actual relationships between properties in nature"

### Max Born (1949) stated three assumptions that dominated physics until the twentieth century:

- 1. "Causality postulates that there are laws by which the occurrence of an entity B of a certain class depends on the occurrence of an entity A of another class, where the word entity means any physical object, phenomenon, situation, or event. A is called the cause, B the effect."
- 2. "Antecedence postulates that the cause must be prior to, or at least simultaneous with, the effect."
- 3. "Contiguity postulates that cause and effect must be in spatial contact or connected by a chain of intermediate things in contact."

By putting a bar on the speed of information or influence, which is a very slow speed in the backdrop of a huge universe, Einstein's theories have not strengthened but weakened causality determinism. What we see as its result is that, soon after the Big Bang, the portions of the universe start distancing from one another, not only in terms of their physical positions nut also on terms of their ability to influence one another. Soon, most of the components of the universe get so far from one another that it requires not minutes, hours, days or weeks but years for them to communicate with one another. There are huge regions, which require not tens or hundreds but thousands, even millions and billions of years to know about their well being. Effectively, it can be said that if light-barrier is real, the universe's collective existence has no meaning at all; for objects only lying in close vicinity are physically capable of influencing one another, positively or negatively. The universe's status then becomes of the ancient human society when men and

women belonging only to their village or tribe were in position to interact. The universe at a collective level will then emerge as a very backward organisation, where there is hardly communication between various regions. This is an awkwardly unceremonious proposition to believe; for the universe then cannot even be called an organisation, as every organisation needs a regular communication between at least most of its members. If the news of the death of a star takes millions of vears to reach the other stars that cannot even shed a few tears on the death of their fellows, the life of the universe loses the very foundation of collective existence. This makes Einstein's position ludicrous. On the one hand, he has an unshakeable faith in Determinism and is not ready to accept any theory as a complete theory if it violates it. On the other hand, he makes determinism lame by making it unable to move with a significant speed. As a natural corollary to that the principle of cause and effect lose its raison d'être. Theoretically, we can claim that one event is the cause of another event that preceded it. But practically, we delay the effect by drastically curtailing its velocity. The information or force or influence of any kind from the causing effect will only crawl at the speed of light before it reaches its destination changing it the way it wanted to, or the way the affected object wanted to be changed a long time back. What meaning would then causality have? The picture that emerges is of a universe in which a present event may have been determined a long time back in the path of its history, but hardly by events that lie outside the path of its history. In totality it can be said that the present state of the portions of the universe is only the effect of a tubular past leading to the Big Bang, and it has hardly any effect of what has been happening in the rest part of the history of the universe. There is no time for others to take care of one another, or even say "hello," as this hello will take so much time that it would hardly reach the one for whom it was intended. The world thus becomes totally disorganised and individualistic; it is reduced to a mere container of selfish individuals with no desire or ability to communicate with one another. But is this the real universe, we know? The universe that stares us is far from that disorganised state of affairs. It seems to be well-organised and well-knit unit. Its constituent parts seem to be constantly in touch with one another. They do not appear to be unconscious of one another's presence; they seem to form a universe that seems to be in a perfect state of harmony, a harmony that cannot be there without mutual trust and knowledge of one another's' limitations and capabilities.

Determinism in Physics has very well established roots. This is one of the major principles

of Classical as well as Relativity physics, and is sometimes referred to as one of the classical "prejudices" along with causality and locality. In QM, probabilistic outcomes play a major role, and future events cannot be predicted precisely. However, Ouantum Mechanics has clearly Bohemian established that, if locality can be abandoned, QM can become deterministic in nature. Even otherwise, probability should not be viewed as the opposite of determinism. If a certain outcome is more probable than others, it indicates a certain amount of certainty. The outcome is not wholly, at random. If it can be predicted that the probability of finding an electron at a certain place is greater than at other places, it clearly shows a preference. If a formula can be derived to indicate this preference, this must obviously have a reason. If we know the reason, we can become more certain.

In the currently accepted version of Physics, causality the way it is understood has become geriatric. The ultimate cause was the Big Bang event, when the laws were already formed that will determine every single event in the future universe. The laws that hold today are the same laws without any change whatsoever. Despite such an old age, how they are surviving is not known. What causes them to maintain their sublimeness? Why does a law like the second law of thermodynamics not affect the life of the laws themselves? When everything else degenerates or gets recycled or undergoes evolution, why not the laws? If it is these laws that lead to the evolution and then degeneration and/or recycling within the universe, why do they not degenerate themselves? How come they did not undergo a phase of evolution themselves instead of appearing within an extremely minute fraction of the first second? Who made them, and who sustains them?

If we look at the human beings and the systems that they have created over the ages, we can easily conclude that laws cannot come into force from nowhere. There has to be a mechanism of the genesis of laws; and there has to be a mechanism of its implementation and continued enforcement. The laws that govern human societies are either made by a King, with or without the consultation of his team of experts, or are made by a body consisting of the representatives of the people and/or experts in laws and other branches of human life. The laws meant for the governance of human behaviour, as individuals and as society, have been evolving from time to time, in content, scope and extent. These laws almost always are enacted for a purpose, which serves either the interests of the all or the majority of the people or more often the interests of the rulers, indirect or direct, of a country or society.

If we have exactly the same set of laws in America and India, there are only two possibilities: Either there has been a communication between the lawmakers of the two countries, or they have both taken the help of the same sources.

Research conducted by an international team of astronomers shows that one of the most important numbers in physics theory, the proton-electron mass ratio, is almost exactly the same in a galaxy 6 billion light years away as it is in Earth's laboratories, approximately 1836.15.

According to Michael Murphy, Swinburne astrophysicist and lead author of the study, it is an important finding, as many scientists debate whether the laws of nature may change at different times and in different places in the Universe. "We have been able to show that the laws of physics are the same in this galaxy half way across the visible Universe as they are here on Earth," he said.

The astronomers determined this by effectively looking back in time at a distant quasar, labeled B0218+367. The quasar's light, which took 7.5 billion years to reach us, was partially absorbed by ammonia gas in an intervening galaxy. Not only is ammonia useful in most bathroom cleaning products, it is also an ideal molecule to test our understanding of physics in the distant Universe. Spectroscopic observations of the ammonia molecule were performed with the Effelsberg 100m radio telescope at 2 cm wavelength (red-shifted from the original wavelength of 1.3 cm). The wavelengths at which ammonia absorbs radio energy from the quasar are sensitive to this special nuclear physics number, the proton-electron mass ratio.

"By comparing the ammonia absorption with that of other molecules, we were able to determine the value of the proton-electron mass ratio in this galaxy, and confirm that it is the same as it is on Earth," says Christian Henkel from the Max Planck Institute for Radio Astronomy in Bonn, Germany, an expert for molecular spectroscopy and co-author of the study.

#### The bigger Picture

It is clear that the light-speed barrier is too big a hurdle for the development of physics and must be abandoned as soon as possible. Abandoning of that barrier is a necessary requirement for understanding Quantum Mechanics. It is also a must to understand how a vast universe like this can is functioning with harmony, and how a system of laws is in operation all over the universe. Furthermore, there seems to be no plausible philosophical ground that can explain that barrier. Light cannot be allowed to adorn divinity, which turns its small speed into an infinite one for all practical purposes. Light-speed barrier is an artificial barrier erected by Einstein's mind. Physicists have

unfortunately turned this barrier into a wall that cannot be scaled. This is despite the accumulating evidences at the microscopic as well as the macroscopic level pointing to the brittle nature of the foundation of this wall. To talk of light-speed as the fastest possible speed is as to talk in the tenth century of the speed of the horse being the fastest achievable speed on the earth.

Laws of Physics pose huge problems - both regarding their genesis and their enforcement. The current theory fails to explain the both. Neither has it had any time for the creation or evolution of laws nor any mechanism for their enforcement. A system without any effective means of communication cannot sustain itself as a system. It will lead to a total chaos, followed by total disaster. It cannot maintain its existence for any appreciable period of time. Enforcement of laws is a must if the universe has to continue to run in a harmonious way. But how the laws are being enforced in the universe is a question that must baffle all the scientists. And if Einstein's light speed barrier is a clear hurdle in understanding the enforcement, this barrier should be dismissed without any further delay.

#### **Refernces (Papers and Books consulted)**

- 1. Consciousness, Causality, and Quantum Physics David Pratt, Journal of Scientific Exploration, 11:1, pp. 69-78,
- 2. Processes and Causality John F. Sowa
- 3. The Copenhagen Interpretation of Quantum Mechanics by Ben Best
- 4. A Brief History of Time SW Hawking
- 5. Afterglow of Creation, Marcus Chown Published 1996, by University Science Books
- 6. Ancient Light, Alan Lightman ,Published 1991, by Harvard University Press
- 7. Before the Beginning by Martin Rees
- 8. Black Holes The End of the Universe? John Taylor, Published 1973, by Souvenir Press Ltd.
- 9. Black Holes and Quasars and other Mysteries, Stan Joinler
- 10. Dreams of a Final Theory, Stephen Weinberg

- 11. Einstein's Greatest Blunder , Donald Goldsmith, Published 1995, by Harvard University Press
- 12. Relativity, Thermodynamics and Cosmology, Tolman
- 13. The Accidental Universe, PCW Davis, Published 1982, by Cambridge University Press
- 14. The Cosmic Blueprint, Paul Davies, Published 1987, by Heinemann Books Ltd.
- 15. The Exploding Universe, Nigel Henbest, Published 1979, by Marshall Caverdish Books Ltd.
- 16. The First Three Minutes, Stephen Weinberg, Published 1977, by Andre Deutsch Ltd.
- 17. The Last Three Minutes, Paul Davies, Published 1994, by The Guernsey Press Company
- 18. The Nature of Space and Time, S Hawking and R Penrose, Published 1996, by Princeton University Press.
- 19. The Runaway Universe, Paul Davies, Published 1978, by Biddles Ltd.
- 20. A Realist Philosophy of Science, Jerrold L. Aronson, (1984), St. Martin's Press, New York.
- 21. Natural Philosophy of Cause and Chance, Max Born (1949), Dover Publications, New York.
- 22. "Zur Elektrodynamik bewegter Körper," by Albert Einstein (1905) translated as "On the electrodynamics of moving bodies," in A. Einstein, H. A. Lorentz, H. Weyl, & H. Minkowski, The Principle of Relativity, Dover Publications, New York.
- 23. "Causation and nonmonotonic temporal reasoning," Peter Grünwald, (1997) in G. Brewka et al., KI-97:
- 24. "Causation," Kim, Jaegwon (1995) in R. Audi, ed., The Cambridge Dictionary of Philosophy, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge. Second edition, 1999, pp. 125-127.
- 25. Morphology of galaxies: An overview by R. Buta, Department of Physics & Astronomy, University of Alabama, USA26.
- 26. "A relation between distance and radial velocity among extra-galactic nebulae" by E Hubble, 1929. Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, 15:168-173.

Phones: 91-132-2680440, 91-9760776753

9/6/2010

<sup>\*</sup> The author is a thinker, and is author of more than a dozen books including, "Rediscovering the Universe", "The Devil of Economic Fundamentalism" and "Beyond Einsteinian Limits". He is Executive Chairman, PEACE, 10, Bhagwati Colony, Saharanpur, UP, India

### Role Of Cassava In Minimizing Household Food Insecurity In Owerri North L.G.A Of Imo State

#### Emenyonu, Christopher Akujuobi

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology Owerri, P.M.B. 1526 Owerri Imo State. <a href="mailto:ceemenyonu@yahoo.com">ceemenyonu@yahoo.com</a>, +2348028347174.

#### Inyang, Nyambi .N.

Cross Rivers State University of Technology Obubra, <a href="mailto:nyambiinyang@yahoo.com">nyambiinyang@yahoo.com</a>, +2348037376104.

#### Ohajianya Donatus .O.

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology Owerri, P.M.B. 1526 Owerri Imo State. <a href="mailto:dohajianya@yahoo.com">dohajianya@yahoo.com</a>, +2348035438019.

#### Henri-Ukoha Ada

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology Owerri, P.M.B. 1526 Owerri Imo State. <a href="https://haukoha@yahoo.com">haukoha@yahoo.com</a>, +2348036682823.

#### Onyemauwa Sebastian .C.

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology Owerri, P.M.B. 1526 Owerri Imo State. <u>csonyemauwa@yahoo.com</u>, +2348069284242.

#### Kadiri Fuasat Ajoke

Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology Owerri, P.M.B. 1526 Owerri Imo State. fakadiri@yahoo.com, +2348023310601.

Abstract: This study was aimed at analyzing' the role of cassava in minimizing household food insecurity in Owerri North L.G.A. of Imo State, based on the survey of 70 randomly selected households. The specific objectives were to determine the quantity of cassava consumed per household; factors influencing the quantity consumed and estimate the percentage contribution of cassava towards meeting daily calorific requirement as well as identification of the constraints that influence cassava consumption in the area. Multiple regression analysis was run in a bid to estimate the factors that affect the quantity of cassava consumed. The results of the analysis showed that price of cassava, price of close substitutes and household sizes were the major determinants and hence significant measures of cassava quantity consumed in the area. Food security here was measured in terms of energy value in the quantity consumed and entitlement (availability and price when compared with close substitutes) it was observed that cassava made 36% contribution towards meeting daily energy requirement per adult and hence does not provide enough food security when compared with the standard for an adult, but in terms of entitlement, it was a food secure crop as it was the cheapest and most readily available when compared with other close substitutes. The major constraint faced by the respondents was the cost of the product. Though most of the household produce it, it is often taken outside the council area to market so as to meet other family needs. It was therefore recommend that to mitigate food security in the council area, other products of cassava should be enhanced to increase household consumption of the products and again the provision of more processing centers in the villages will reduce the cost of the product.

[Emenyonu, Christopher Akujuobi, Inyang, Nyambi .N., Ohajianya Donatus .O., Henri-Ukoha Ada Onyemauwa Sebastian .C., Kadiri Fuasat AjokeRole Of Cassava In Minimizing Household Food Insecurity In Owerri North L.G.A Of Imo State. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):80-85]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: Roles, Cassava, Minimizing, Household, Food Insecurity, Imo State.

#### 1. Introduction

The UNFAO, (2005) defined food security as a condition in which all people at all time have both physical and economic access to the basic food they need. There are two essentially and joint determinants of food security, availability and access to food. Availability does not guarantee access to food but access to food is contingent on there being food available at market as the poor usually lack adequate means to secure access to food. Scarcity of

food has very devastating effect on human beings, but cassava as a food security crop has played roles in many household to reduce this devastating effect. Cassava derives its importance from the fact that it is starchy, a cheap source of carbohydrate, more so, its tuber roots are a valuable source of cheap calories especially in developing countries where calories deficiency and malnutrition are wild spread. Over 2/3 of the total production of cassava is consumed in various forms by human. Cassava provides about 45% of all calories consumed in Africa (Nwajiuba

1995) and about 70% of the daily calories intake of over 50 million Nigerians. Cassava has advantage over other crops when compared; it generates income for the largest numbering households (FAO, 2002). It provides the farmer with an income earning opportunity enabling him to purchase commodities, which can contribute to the household food security. Most households grow cassava as their main stable food, because tree crop production requires peak labour input mainly at planting and harvesting season while cassava production does not require such seasonal labour. Cassava roots are boiled and eaten without further processing. It has many alternative uses, the roots of sweet cassava varieties are eaten raw, roasted in an open fire, or boiled in water. Boiled roots maybe pounded alone or in combination with other starchy staples.

In the light of the above problems on food security and the potentials of cassava as a food security crop, this study wants to find out the quantity of cassava that is consumed by the households in the study area, is it at variance with the standard calorific requirements, and what contribution does cassava make towards reducing the security gap. What about in terms of entitlement, are the prices at par with other close substitutes? Several studies exist on food security (Odii 1994; Nwajiuba, 1995; Emenyonu, et al 2006), but information is scanty on the role played by cassava as a major stable food in minimizing food insecurity and non specifically in the study area. This study is justified based on the hypothesis that there is no significant difference between the quantity of cassava consumed and standard calorific requirement in the area. Again this will intensify further policy action on cassava production and consumption.

#### 2. Materials And Methods

This study was carried out in Owerri North Local Government Area. This one of the L.G.A. in Imo State, with the largest population. It has 12 communities and they include Emekuku, Emii, Naze, Agbala, Ulakwo. Uratta. Obibiezena. Amakohia, Akwakuma, Egbu, Awaka and Obube. It has a population of 144, 161, with land area of 165.83km<sup>2</sup> and population density of 869.3/km (NPC 2004). The main occupation in these communities is not only farming, but Civil Service, and the major crops produced include cassava, maize, melon, and vegetables, while livestock production is occasional with local breeds. 7 communities were selected purposefully from the 12, this were those with high production and consumption of cassava products. Out

of the 7 communities 10 households were selected randomly giving sample size of 70. This is to ensure that every household was equally likely to be selected and hence eliminate bias. A questionnaire was administered on a face to face basis to the respondents. Information obtained from households interalia, quantities of cassava consumed, household size and other socioeconomic characteristics. Basic statistical tools were used to analyze the socioeconomic characteristics such as mean, frequencies and percentages. While the OLS multiple regression technique was used in an effort to estimate the factors that influence cassava consumption. Again, in estimating the energy contribution of cassava, the percentage contribution was estimated following Olomu (1995). Moreso, food security measure in terms of entitlement was done by comparing the availability and unit price of cassava with other close substitutes following Devereux and Naeraa (1993). In doing this, the following models were used.

#### Model 1.

1120442			
	Q	=	$f(X_1x_2,X_3,X_4,X_5)$
Where	Q	=	Qty cassava
			consumed in kg
	$\mathbf{X}_1$	=	Monthly price
			of cassava in ( <del>N</del> )
	$X_2$	=	Price of other
			close substitutes (₹)
	$X_3$	=	Household size
			in Number
	$X_4$	=	Colour of

Yellow = 1, White otherwise (0)

Calorific

 $X_5$  = Income level of household head ( $\frac{N}{2}$ )

product (yellow/White)

#### Model 11

Requirement

#### 3. Results And Discussion

The tables below represent some vital socioeconomic characteristics of the respondents.

Table 1: Frequency and Percentage Distribution Of Respondents By Households Size.

Household Size	Frequency	Percentage	
1 – 5	24	35.29	
6 – 10	35	50	
11 – 15	11	15.71	
Total	70	100	

Mean household size

= 7

**Source:** Computed from Survey Data, (2005)

From Table 1, 50% of the respondents have household size ranging from 6-10 persons. About 16% have the highest household size of 11 - 15 persons. The mean household size is 7 persons. The reason that may be attributed to large household size is nearness of the study area to the city.

Table 2: Frequency and Percentage Distribution of Respondents by Occupation.

Occupation	Frequency	Percentage
Farming	26	37.14
Trading	5	7.14
Civil Servant	24	34.29
Others	15	21.43
Total	70	100.00

Source: Computed from survey data, 2005

**From Table 2**, 37% percent of the respondents are engaged in farming, 7% trading and about 34 percent civil servants. The high preponderance of civil servants is closely related with the level of education that is observed in the study area.

**Table 3**: Frequency and Percentage Distribution of Respondents by Level of Education.

<b>Educational Attainment</b>	Frequency	Percentage
Primary	16	22.86
Secondary	23	32.86
Tertiary	14	20
Vocational	17	24.28
Total	70	100

**Source: Filed Survey Data 2005** 

**From Table 3** about 33% of the respondents had secondary education while 20% had tertiary education. About 24% had vocational training. These suggest that if there is any food security measure that is taken in the area, they will abide by such policy statement for better living.

**Table 4:** Frequency and Percentage Distribution of Respondents by Monthly Income.

Amount in	Frequency	Percentage
1000 – 5000	21	30

Academia Arena	2010:2(10	0)
----------------	-----------	----

6000 – 10000	16	22.86
> 10000	33	47.14
Total	70	100

Source: Field Survey Data 2005

Table four showed that most of the respondents (52.86%) are low income earners. About 47% earn N10000 and above as their monthly income. This is an indication of the amount of money that will be spent on food in general and garri to be specific.

**Table 5**: Percentage Distribution of Respondents by Frequency of Cassava Consumption.

Frequency of Consumption	Number of Respondents	Percentage
Eaten Once	44	62.86
Eaten Twice	19	27.14
Eaten Trice	7	10
Total	70	100

Source: Field Survey Data 2005

From Table 5 virtually everybody in the area eats cassava products. 62.8% eat once, 27.14 twice and about 10% trice daily. The reason that maybe adduced to this consumption rate is the effect of urbanization and proximity to state capital where diet variation is more common.

Table 6: Frequency and Percentage Distribution of Respondents by Constraints in Cassava Consumption.

Constraints	Number of Respondents	Percentage
High Cost	20	28.5
Scarcity	18	25.71
Difficulty in Processing	20	20.57
Inferior to Other Staples	12	17.14
Total	70	100

Source: Field Survey Data 2005

Table 6 shows that the major constraint faced by the respondents is high cost of the product as most of them are low income earners. 25.7% also indicated that scarcity relative to price is another major problem. The least constraints faced by them is the case of inferiority to other staple foods with the frequency of 17.14%.

#### 3.2 Food Security Measures

Measure in terms of energy value

Total consumed per household = 2.50kg

Mean quantity per person per day = 0.36kg

Standard calorific requirement per person per day = 1700kcal/kg

PC = 
$$\frac{EC}{SR} \mathbf{X} = \frac{100}{1}$$
  
 $\frac{612}{1700} \mathbf{X} = \frac{100}{1} = 36\%$ 

From the above result, the percentage contribution of cassava towards meeting the daily standard energy requirement is 36%, this implies that cassava has not provided the much needed security in terms of energy value. This agrees with the results on Table 6 where it was discovered that the highest frequency of consumption was "once".

#### 3.3 Measure In Terms Of Entitlement

Entitlement here means amount of money spent on cassava monthly per household and the price of cassava when compared to other close staples which are also carbohydrates.

**Table 7: Food Security Measure in Terms of Entitlements** 

Parameter	Cassava	Yam	Rice
Quantity Consumed/Month	475 Cups	88 Tubers	362 Cups
Mean Household Size	7	7	7
Total Price Monthly	9500	13200	10,860
Unit Price	20 Cups	150 Tuber	30 Cups
Mean Price	135.71	188.57	155.14

**Source: Field Survey Data 2005** 

From Table 7 above, cassava is deemed a food security crop in terms of entitlement with a mean price of N135.71 spent on it daily as against rice and yam with prices of N155.14 and 188.57 respectively, which implies that it is cheaper to buy cassava (garri) than either yam or rice.

Table 8: Regression Results of the Determinants of the Quantity of Cassava Consumed

Functional forms	Semi-log	Exponential	Linear	Double log
Intercept	354.9254	2.70088	15.8135	6.6864
R-square	0.561	0.695	0.763	0.731
F-value	16.36	29.13	41.00	34.75
$(X_1)$	-16.5761	-0.0000	-0.0037	-0.0726
	(-2.30)*	(-0.38)	(-3.56)*	(-0.73)
$(X_2)$	-16.5761	-0.001	-0.0083	-0.0726
	(-2.3)*	(-5.33)*	(-8.52)*	(-0.73)
$(X_3)$	80.939	-0.3167 (9.70)*	21.0126	1.3552
	(6.937)*		(-8.53)*	(8.50)*
$(X_4)$	12.8491	0.1424	-0.1136	-0.0262
	(-1.14)	(1.26)	(-0.02)	(-0.17)
$(X_5)$	-11.379	-0.0002	-0.0006	-0.1861
	(-1.94)	(-1.41)	(-0.94)	(-2.31)*

Source: field Survey Data 2005
Figures in Parenthesis are t-ratios
\* = Significant @ 5%

 $X_1,\,X_2,\,\ldots\,X_5,$  stands as previously defined

From Table 8, the linear model provided the lead equation based on economic, econometric and apriori expectations. Therefore, all other discussions were based on it. Among the explanatory variables, only price of cassava  $(x_1)$ , the price of close substitutes  $(x_2)$  and household size  $(x_2)$  were highly significant at 5% probability level. The coefficients of  $x_1$  and  $x_2$  were inversely related to the quantity of cassava. This implies that as the prices of  $x_1$  and  $x_2$  decrease, the quantity consumed of cassava increases. This agrees with basic economic principles that price has an inverse relationship with quantity

demanded. The coefficient of household size  $(x_3)$  is positive and significant at 5%. This implies that as household size increases the quantity of cassava (garri) consumed increases. This agrees with apriori expectations and the results of (Emenyonu et al, 2006). However, the coefficient of  $x_4$  (colour) and income  $(x_5)$  are insignificant and inversely related to the quantity of cassava communed. This implies that they are not major determinants of quantity of cassava consumed in the area.

#### 4. Policy Recommendation And Conclusion

Given the problems faced by the respondents in the study area, cassava processing technologies should be improved so as to reduce the cost in the market. Government and NGOs and other agencies should collaborate in the establishment of more cassava processing centres in the villages to reduce costs. Other cassava products should be enhanced to increase households interest in the products. Since some of the explanatory variables were found to be significant and important determinants of the quantity cassava consumed, emphasis should be given to those factors which were found to be significant while those which were insignificant de-emphasized. Again, a comparison of the amount of money spent on cassava and price of garri with other close staples showed garri to be the cheapest and most available and hence a food secure crop in that area. However, in terms of energy (calorific contributions), it was low when compared with the standard requirement. This was adduced to the low rate of consumption in the area. This agrees with results of Okigbo (1986), and Nweke et al (1986).

Correspondence to \*Emenyonu, C.A Department of Agricultural Economics, Federal University of Technology, Owerri, PMB 1526 Owerri, Imo State, Nigeria. cemenyonu@yahoo.com.

#### References

21/09/2010.

- Devereux, S. and Naeraa, T. (1993): Drought and Entitlement in Namibia Agriculture. Social Science Division, University of Namibia.
- Emenyonu, C.A; Odii, M.A.C.A.; Okafor, R.M.; Onyemauwa, C.S.; and Agu, E.C. (2006): Minimizing household food Insecurity Among farming Households in Enugu State, Nigeria: In proceedings of the Annual Conference of the Nigerian Association of Agricultural Economists. LAUTECH Ogbomoso
- FAO, (2002): Proceedings of the workshop on processing technology for cassava and other tropical root and tubers in Africa. Abidjan, Ivory Coast, Vol. I and II.
- 4. FAO, (2005): Partnership formed to improve cassava staple food of 600 million people, Rome.
- 5. National Population Commission Hand book (1994).
- Nweke, F.L., Ugwa, B.O. Ajabo. O. and Okwor, G. (2006): Collaborative Research and Studies on Cassava (COSCA) working paper 3.
- 7. Odii, M.A.C.A. (1994): "Minimizing Population Induced Food Gap through Alternative Socioeconomic and Land Tenure strategies". A Paper presented at the International Methodological Seminar. Organized for Guarantees by Union for African Population Studies, at Bingerville, Ivory Coast April, 11-16.
- 8. Oke. O.K. (1968): Cassava as food in Nigeria, World Review Nutrition Diet 9, Pp 227- 250. Okigbo, B.N. (1986): Cassava a "Famine" Crop.
- 9. Oiomu, (J.M.) (1995): Monogastric Animal nutrition principle and practice, Namibia Pp. 135.
- Romanoff, S. and Lynam (1988): Cassava and Africa food Security. Seme Ethnographic Examples. CIAT, CALI, Columbia.

### Nesting Behaviour of a Tropical Avian Species, the Pied Bush Chat (Saxicola caprata)

Vinaya Kumar Sethi, Dinesh Bhatt, Amit Kumar and Vivek Saxena

Department of Zoology and Environmental Science, Gurukul Kangri University, Haridwar 249 404, Uttarakhand, India

E-mails: vinayaksethi@yahoo.co.in, dineshharidwar@gmail.com

**Abstract:** Nesting behaviour in majority of bird species in India is poorly studied. The present study deals with some aspects of breeding behaviour in the Pied Bush Chat (*Saxicola caprata*) such as the length of breeding season, peak breeding activity, nest site selection, nest building and nest site characteristics. Observations were made during March-June in 2008 and 2009 in the scrub lands, agricultural fields and suburban areas of district Haridwar (29<sup>0</sup> 55' N and 78<sup>0</sup> 08' E; Himalayan foothills of Uttarakhand state), India. Systematic field visits were carried out in most parts of the day almost on alternate days. The breeding activities of Pied Bush Chat commenced in late February and continued till July. The peak in breeding activity was observed in May as maximum clutches (35%) were observed in this month. Nest-site selection was performed by both the sexes. However, final decision seemed to be of the female. Male initially explored the whole territory and inspected various sites such as quarries, gravel pits, road cuttings, construction site, under-bushes etc. Thereafter, he approached the female to show her sites for final selection. Only female performed the nest building. Nest was an open cup made up of grasses and rootlets tucked into a hole or crevice. Nest construction period averaged 8.47±2.68 days and did not vary between study periods. The outer nest diameter, cup diameter and cup depth were measured 76.32±5.52 mm, 61.3±4.26 mm, and 51.73±3.61 mm respectively.

[Vinaya Kumar Sethi, Dinesh Bhatt, Amit Kumar and Vivek Saxena. Nesting behaviour of a tropical avian species, the Pied Bush Chat (*Saxicola caprata*). Academia Arena 2010;2(10):86-90]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Key words: Breeding season, bird, nesting behaviour, Pied Bush Chat, Saxicola caprata

#### 1. Introduction

In the tropics, avian breeding seasons extend throughout the year in keeping with the extended favourable conditions; nevertheless, breeding in individual species is essentially periodic (Baker, 1938; Chandola and Thapliyal, 1978). In addition, survival success in birds depends to a greater extent on their ability to decide when and where to form a nest 1985). Nest site selection involves (Cody, discrimination among alternative sites that provides different sets of circumstances affecting survival and reproduction. Also, the architecture of the nest should be such that helps to survive the young against unfavorable conditions. Hence, it is an important decision to be made by birds. All the avian species build species-specific nests and architecture of the nest has been known to be perfect through the process of natural selection (Hansell, 1984). However, nestsite selection of the majority of bird species in India is poorly studied (Gokula, 2001).

The present study attempts to study the nesting behaviour of a tropical avian species- the Pied Bush Chat (*Saxicola caprata*) in its natural habitat. The objectives of the present study were to gather information on the length of breeding season, peak in breeding activity, nest site selection, nest building and nest site characteristics of the Pied Bush Chat.

### 2. Materials and Methods2.1 Study Area and Period

We observed individuals of the Pied Bush Chat during March-June in 2008 and 2009 in the scrub lands, agricultural fields and suburban areas of district Haridwar (29° 55' N and 78° 08' E; Himalayan foothills of Uttarakhand state), India. Study area was composed of mainly bare stone grounds and small patches of bushy vegetations (Figure 1). In addition, some nests were observed in partially-developed human settlements also.

#### 2.2 About the Pied Bush Chat

The Pied Bush Chat (Order Passeriformes, Family Muscicapidae), a sexually dichromatic species, occurs discontinuously from Transcaspia and the Indian subcontinent to southeast Asia, the Philippines, Indonesia (except Borneo), New Guinea and New Britain (Ali and Ripley, 1998). The male is black except for a white rump, wing patch and lower belly along with dark brown iris (Figure 2). The female is drab brown and slightly streaked. Juveniles have a scaly appearance on the underside but are dark above, like the females (Grimmett et al., 1998).

This species is found in open habitats including scrub, grassland and cultivated areas. They nest in cavities in stone walls or in holes in an embankment, lining the nest with grass and animal

86

hair. Males are very territorial and actively resist intrusion into their feeding and breeding areas by conspecifics or other chats (Ali and Ripley, 1998). During the breeding period, males deliver short whistling songs from prominent perches to defend and maintain their respective territories (Ali and Ripley, 1998).

#### 2.3 General Methodology

Systematic field visits were carried out in most parts of the day almost on alternate days or as required for recording activities such as nest site selection and nest building. Behaviours were observed/recorded mostly from hides or considerable distance using 8x50 prismatic field binocular without disturbing the individuals. Still camera (Nikon FM 3A) with 300mm zoom lens and video camera (Sony DVD803E) were also used to capture the relevant behavioural activities. Results are reported as Means±SD. Data were analyzed with two-tailed *t*-test (Zar, 1999).

#### 3. Results and Discussion

#### 3.1 Breeding Season of the Pied Bush Chat

The breeding activities of Pied Bush Chat commenced in late February and continued till July in the study area. Female started adding nesting material to nest site in the first week of March. Building of first nest started on 06 March and 09 March in 2008 and 2009 respectively. Dates of laying of the first egg were 14 March and 19 March 2008 and 2009 respectively.

The peak in breeding activity (availability of maximum clutches) in Pied Bush Chat was observed in April-May in both the study years as 37.7% nests in 2008 and 36.84% nests in 2009 were observed in the month on May and April respectively (N = 83 nests). On pooling the data of both years, maximum clutches (35%) were observed in the month of May alone (Figure 3). Some birds, however, started breeding late probably because of non-availability of suitable nesting sites. The first batch of nestlings fledged on 16 April and 14 April in 2008 and 2009 respectively.

The breeding season in the Pied Bush Chat extended over a period of five months chiefly from late February to July. Similarly, there are other studies that indicate almost the same length of breeding season in the Pied Bush Chat (Ali and Ripley, 1998; Grimmett et al., 1998). However, in Port Moresby, Papua New Guinea, breeding season of Pied Bush Chat extends over a period of seven months from July to January (Bell and Swainson, 1985). The long breeding season of Pied Bush Chat allows breeding pairs to raise more than one brood. Although availability of insect food for the nestlings in April-

May (when early breeder rear their young) was not as abundant as in the June-July (monsoon period), early breeding in the season might be adaptive in acquiring better nesting sites (Dhanda and Dhindsa, 1998).

#### 3.2 Nest Site Selection in the Pied Bush Chat

In the Pied Bush Chat nest-site selection was performed by both the sexes. However, final decision seemed to be of female. Male Pied Bush Chat, in most of the cases (>97%) initiated to explore the whole territory. He inspected various sites such as quarries, gravel pits, road cuttings, construction site, underbushes etc. repeatedly and then delivered songs. Thereafter, he restricted his activities to certain smaller areas and explored them more thoroughly. Then he approached the female to show her the sites for final selection. In an instance observed on 14 April 2008, a male was seen fluttering in front of a crevice. The female flew to and perched near him and followed him into the crevice. The male went inside, out of sight, and then emerged. The female then went inside. Both went in and out thrice more. Thereafter, the site was selected and the pair raised its first brood in it.

During nest site selection there were frequent interactions between male and female Pied Bush Chats. Sometimes, both males and females were seen displaying at potential nest sites by spreading their wings in combination with nest-shaping motions. The female usually performed this behaviour with the mate nearby. After visiting a number of sites the female started collecting small rootlets. This behaviour was usually brief, ineffectual at first and the female soon tried more sites. Finally, a rootlet was brought to one of the nest sites that had been tried recently (not necessarily the last tried). Female was observed trying the other sites also even after she had brought several loads of material to one site. Like Pied Bush Chat, in other species also the male typically displays at several nest sites, one of which is finally selected by the female (Pinkowski, 1979; Aguon and Conant, 1994; Bhatt and Kumar, 1999; Sethi, 2008).

In addition to nest in abandoned open areas and scrublands, Pied Bush Chat selected different structures (like any hole in the walls of any building) within human settlements also. The reason for the selection of such human populated sites by a wild species could be related to the shortage of natural habitat. That is, the increasing urbanization is continuously engulfing the natural open lands (habitat of Pied Bush Chat) of the study area, thus leaving less nest site options for the Pied Bush Chat. Adaptation to survive in/near the human settlements may be a good indication also. Because there are a number of avian species that support the idea that urbanization may

even provide better opportunities for the survival of the species (Sodhi et al., 1999).

### 3.3 Nest Building and Nest Characteristics in the Pied Bush Chat

Once a nest site was selected, interactions between male and female became infrequent. Only female performed the nest building in Pied Bush Chat. Female gathered nesting material and constructed the nest while the male sang from a nearby perch. The bird did not bring nesting material from far off distances. Nesting material was searched and collected mostly from the defended territory itself. However, sometimes but rarely, female was seen collecting materials outside of its territory but not from other birds' territory.

Nests of Pied Bush Chats were open cups of grasses and rootlets tucked into a hole or crevice. Nests observed in this study were identical to those described for other Saxicola species (Dementiev and Gladkov, 1968; Bell and Swainson, 1985). Spider web was also used in the cup boundary by the bird probably as a plastering material. The use of spider webs for securing nests to substrate, as well as for binding nesting materials together is found in a number of species within the families Tryannidae and Muscicapidae (Baicich and Harrison, 1997). Nests that were observed in depression on level ground were completely covered overhead by tussocks of grass. Some nest sites were crevices in rocks or under large stones. Despite this, freshly turned earth, as at construction sites also seemed preferred by this species. However, such site selection often led to brood destruction due to construction activities by human beings.

Nest construction period averaged  $8.22\pm2.77$  days (N = 22 nests) and  $8.81\pm2.61$  days (N = 16 nests) in 2008 and 2009 respectively and did not vary between study periods (t = 0.66, df = 34, P>0.05). On pooling the data of both the study periods, nest building period varied from 4 to 14 days and averaged  $8.47\pm2.68$  days (n = 38). Bell and Swainson (1985) have also reported almost similar nest building period for the Pied Bush Chat. However, *Saxicola torquata* takes on an average 5.3 days to build the nest (Fujimaki et al., 1994). Seven nest cups were measured in which outer nest diameter was  $76.32\pm5.52$  mm. Cup diameter was  $61.3\pm4.26$  mm and cup depth was  $51.73\pm3.61$  mm.

Individuals attempting to raise second or third brood in a single breeding season did not often use the nest of first brood. That is, for each breeding attempt pair looked for a new nesting site and built the new nest. For example, in total 83 nesting attempts, we observed only for 7 times when the pair raised the subsequent brood in the nest of the previous brood.

The possible reason for rebuilding the new nest for successive broods was probably related to the shape of the nest. The nest at the time of egg laying was observed quite compact and in a cup-like shape. However, as soon as the 3-4 young grew in this small nest, it got enlarged and de-format. Probably this caused the pair to look for a new nest site and rebuild the nest. Bell and Swainson (1985), however, have reported that the Pied Bush Chat raises its subsequent broods in the same nest. Unlike Pied Bush Chat in our study, Plain Chachalaca (Ortalis vetula) and Brown Rock Chat also use the same nest for raising further broods in the same breeding season (Marion and Fleetwood, 1978; Sethi, 2008). While Northern goshawks (Accipiter gentilis) use the same nest for breeding in many successive years (Wiens and Reynolds, 2005).

Hadden (1975) and Ali and Ripley (1998) have pointed out that both sexes of Pied Bush Chats may participate in nest building. However, we never observed any male co-operating the female in nest building. There were several observations when the female alone enlarged and excavated a cavity in a vertical bank of earth. The male merely remained on nearby song-posts throughout and did not participate on the occasions that we watched. Bell and Swainson (1985) and Fujimaki et al. (1994) have also found that only female builds the nest in *Saxicola* species. Like Pied Bush Chat, nest building entirely by female has been reported for a number of other avian species also (see Sethi, 2008).



Figure 1: View of the natural habitat of the Pied Bush Chat (Saxicola caprata)



Figure 2: Male Pied Bush Chat (Saxicola caprata) in its habitat

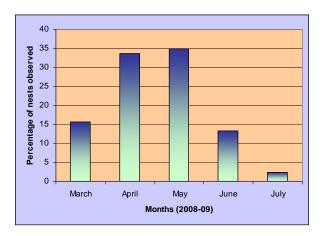


Figure 3: Monthly frequency of nests in Pied Bush Chat (Saxicola caprata)

#### Acknowledgements

Authors are thankful to Head, Department of Zoology and Environmental Science, Gurukul Kangri University Haridwar, India for providing infrastructural facilities to carry out this research. Many thanks to Mr. Shivchand Arora for his assistance during field observations. We are grateful to Swami Shivanand Ji (*Gurudeva*) and his disciples to allow us to conduct a part of this study in their premises at Matri Sadan Ashram, Jagjeetpur, Uttarakhand, India.

#### References

1. Aguon CF, Conant S. Breeding biology of the White-rumped shama on Oahu, Hawaii. Wilson Bulletin 1994;106:311-328.

 Ali S, Ripley SD. Handbook of the Birds of India and Pakistan (Robins to Wagtails). Oxford University Press, New Delhi. 1994.

- 3. Baicich PJ, Harrison CJO. A guide to the nests, eggs, and nestlings of North American birds. Academic Press, San Diego, California. 1997.
- 4. Baker ECS. The evolution of breeding seasons in birds. In: Debeer GR, ed. Essay on aspect of evolutionary biology. Oxford University Press, London. 1938:161-177.
- 5. Bell HL, Swainson GW. The colonization, ecology and breeding of the Pied Stonechat *Saxicola caprata* at Port Moresby, Papua New Guinea. Ibis 1985;127:74-83.
- Bhatt D, Kumar A. Breeding behaviour of Oriental magpie robin *Copsychus saularis*. Proceedings of XXVI International Ethological Conference, Bangalore, India. 1999;165.
- 7. Chandola A, Thapliyal JP. Regulation of reproductive cycles of tropical spotted munia and weaver bird. In: Assenamacher I, Farner DS, eds. Environmental endocrinology. Springer Verlag, Berlin. 1978:61-63.
- 8. Cody ML. Habitat selection in Birds. Academic Press, New York. 1985.
- Dementiev GP, Gladkov NA. Birds of the Soviet Union VI. Israel Programme for Scientific Translation, Jerusalem. 1968.
- Dhanda SK, Dhindsa MS, Breeding ecology of common myna *Acridotheres tristis* with special reference to the effect of season and habitat on reproductive variables. Journal of Bombay Natural History Society 1998;95:43-56.
- 11. Fujimaki Y, Takamata M, Sato F. Breeding biology of the Stonechat in southeastern Hokkaidp, Japan. Research Bulletin of Obihiro University 1994;19:37-46.
- 12. Gokula V. Nest-site selection of White-bowed fantail *Rhipidura aureola* in Mudumalai Wildlife Sanctuary. Journal of Bombay Natural History Society 2001;98:179-183.
- 13. Grimmett R, Inskipp C, Inskipp T, Birds of the Indian Subcontinent. Oxford University Press, New Delhi, 1998.
- 14. Hadden D. Observations. PNG Bird Society Newsletter 1975;115:9.
- 15. Hansell MH. Animal architecture and building behaviour. Longmans, London. 1984.
- 16. Marion WR, Fleetwood RJ. Nesting ecology of the Plain chachalaca in South Texas. Wilson Bulletin 1978;90:386-395.

- 17. Pinkowski BC. Nest site selection in Eastern bluebirds. Condor 1979;81:435-436.
- 18. Sethi VK. Sociobiological aspects of breeding of Brown Rock Chat *Cercomela fusca* with special reference to acoustic signals. Ph.D. Thesis submitted to Gurukul Kangri University, Haridwar. 2008.
- 19. Sodhi NS, Briffett C, Kong L, Yuen B. Bird use of linear areas of a tropical city:
- **Manuscript submission date** 01-10-2010

- implications for park connector design and management. Landscape and Urban Planning 1999;45:123-130.
- 20. Wiens JD, Reynolds RT. Is fledging success a reliable index of fitness in Northern goshawks? Journal of Raptor Research 2005;39:210-221.
- 21. Zar JH. Biostatistical Analysis. Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey. 1999.

# Uptake of Phosphate and Heavy Metals by Sorghum in Automobile Waste affected Typic HaplustuLt in South east Nigeria.

C.N. Mbah

Department of Soil Science and Environmental Management Ebonyi State University, P.M.B. 053, Abakaliki, Ebonyi State – Nigeria. cnmbah10@yahoo.com

**Abstract**: This study investigated the phosphate  $(P_{04}^-)$  and heavy metal (Cu, Zn, Fe, Pb and Cd) uptake by sorghum in a typic haplustult affected by automobile waste. Results of the study showed that automobile waste enriched the soil with heavy metals above maximum acceptable limits. Similarly, higher levels of  $P_{04}^-$  and heavy metals were observed in the roots and shoots of sorghum in automobile waste soil relative to the control. However, observed levels of heavy metals in the test crop were within normal range in plants for automobile and control soils. Automobile waste soils in the area are safe for agricultural activities.

[C.N. Mbah. Uptake of Phosphate and Heavy Metals by Sorghum in Automobile Waste affected Typic HaplustuLt in South east Nigeria. Academia Arena 2010;2(10):91-93]. (ISSN 1553-992X).

Keywords: normal range, acceptable limit, heavy metals, sorghum, agricultural activities automobile waste.

#### 1. Introduction

Soil is naturally a source of heavy metals (Alloway, 1995) and a recipient of heavy metals due to anthropogenic activities (Javier and Rafeal, 2005; Alloway, 1995). In Nigeria automobile servicing and maintenance centres popularly known as "mechanic village" are located in many cities. Wastes that are normally generated in the course of auto-repair and servicing are disposed indiscriminately into the environment. These wastes according to Dominguez – Rosado and Pitchel (2004) include used engine oil which deteriorate the nearby lands and have grave consequences on the system (Nwoko *et al.*, 2007).

In a study on the physicochemical characterization of farmland affected by automobile waste in relation to heavy metals, Mbah and Ezeaku (2010)reported decreased ca, k, mg. CEC and increased levels of Zn, Pb, Cd, and Cu (above critical limits) in automobile waste affected farmland relative to the control.In another study on variation of heavy metal contents on roadside soils along a major expressway in south east Nigeria, Mbah and Anikwe (2010) observed increased levels of Cu, Zn, Pb, Fe and Cd in soil nearer the road and this according to Maynard and Turer, (2003) is due to emissions from exhaust of automobile engines and contacts between metallic objects of machines. Mbah et al, (2006) and Faghenro (2000) observed accumulation to toxic levels of such metals as pb, zn, cu, cd and cr in crops grown in organic waste amended soils in Nigeria.

Scarcity of land and the need to provide food to the increasing population has led to increased cultivation of lands including automobile waste affected farmlands in major cities in Nigeria. Research on the benefits and dangers associated with cropping in

automobile waste affected farmland is scarce in the area. This study examined the uptake of phosphate and heavy metals (cu, zn, pb, zn, and cd) by sorghum in an ultisol affected by automobile waste in Abakaliki Southeast Nigeria.

#### 2. Materials and Methods

#### 2.1 Study area:

This study was carrid out in 2009 at Abakaliki south east Nigeria. Abakaliki is located in Ebonyi State in the southern part of Nigeria. Abakaliki is the capital city of Ebonyi State and lies between latitude  $06^{\circ}04^{1}N$  and longitude  $08^{\circ}65^{1}E$  in the derived savannah zone of the southernagroecological zone of Nigeria. Soils of the area are products from successive deposit from Asu River of crutaceous age belonging to the order ultisol and classified as Typic Haplustult, (FDALR, 1985). The area experiences bimodal pattern of rainfall i.e. April-July and September - early November with short spell in August – normally called "august break". The area has an average annual rainfall range of 1700 -2000mm and mean annual temperature ranging from 27°C - 31°C. Farming is a major economic activity even in urban areas where patches of subsistence farms are found.

#### 2.3 Field Studies:

Field sampling was conducted using a free survey technique involving target sampling of soils from two sites viz automobile waste affected farmland (automobiles soil) and non-automobile waste affected farmland (control). On each area soil samples were collected at the surface (0-20cm). Similarly, twelve sorghum plants were uprooted from

automobile waste affected soil and twelve from a nearby farmland which served as the control. The roots of the plants were cut of from the shoots. The soil and plant materials (roots and shoots) materials were air dried and analysed for phosphate and heavy metale (cu, zn, pb, cd and fe).

#### 2.4 Analysis

Phosphates was determined by phenol sulphuric acid and ascorbic acid molybednum blue methods, respectively, Total Iron(Fe), copper(Cu), lead(pb), zinc(Zn) and cadmium(cd) were measured by Sp 1900 pye Unican Recording flame atomic absorption spectrophotometer at their respective wavelengths after wet digestion with a mixture of HCL and HN0<sub>3</sub>.

#### 2.5 Data Analysis:

Linear regression analysis was performed on soil data and heavy metal using SAS computer software (SAS, Institute 2001).

#### 1. Results and Discussions

Results from the Study showed that the phosphate ( $P_{04}$ -) level in automobile was 22% higher than that of the control. (Tables 1 and 2). The tables also showed higher  $P_{04}$ - uptake by sorghum shoots compared to the roots in both soils. Similarly, higher  $P_{04}$ - uptake was observed in shoots and roots of sorghum in automobile waste soil compared to the control.

Heavy metals ranged between  $0.09 \pm 0.001$  (fe),  $38.2 \pm 0.04$  (pb),  $0.09 \pm 0.001$ (fe),  $2 \pm 0.2$  (cd),  $2 \pm 0.2$  (cu) and  $0.08 \pm 0.01$  (fe),  $1.32 \pm 0.01$  (pb),  $0.22 \pm 0.01$ (zn),  $0.02 \pm 0$  (cd),  $0.06 \pm 0.001$  (cu) in automobile waste and control soils, respectively (Tables 1 and 2). Higher levels of heavy metals were observed in the shoots and roots of sorghum in automobile waste soil relative to the control. Lead (pb), zn, cu, fe and cd shoot content in automobile soil were 33%, 16459%, 9%, 16867% and 131900%, respectively higher than observed values in the control. The order of root heavy metal content was pb > zn > cd > fe > cu for automobile waste soil and pb > zn > fe > cd = cu for the control.

Table I: Soil content and uptake of heavy metal by sorghum in automobile waste soil (mgkg<sup>-1</sup>)

Soil depth (cm)		Pla	ınt
Heavy me	etal 0-20	shoot	root
Fe	$0.09 \pm 0.001$	0.509	0.291
Zn	$2.04 \pm 0.01$	1.324	1.702
Pb	$30.2 \pm 0.04$	12.27	18.34
Cd	$2.0 \pm 0.2$	1.32	1.02
Fu	$2.0 \pm 0.2$	0.012	0.007
P0 <sub>4</sub> =	0.026	0.007	0.005

Table 2: Soil content and uptake of heavy metal by sorghum in control soil.

	Soil depth	(cm) Plan	nt
Heavy	Metal 0-20	shoot	root
Fe	$0.008 \pm 0.01$	0.003	0.003
Zn	$2.22 \pm 0.01$	1.008	1.006
Pb	$1.32 \pm 0.01$	9.21	9.70
Cd	$0.02 \pm 0$	0.001	0.001
Cu	$0.06 \pm 0.001$	0.011	0.001
$P0_4$	0.008	0.007	0.002

Table 3: Maximum permissible levels/normal concentration of heavy metals in soil and plants. (mgkg<sup>-1</sup>)

Heavy metal	Soil	Plant
Fe	< 5.4 <sup>a</sup>	-
Cu	$< 0.2^{a}$	$5-20^{x}$
Zn	$2^{a}$	$1-40^{x}$
P	5 <sup>a</sup>	$0.2-20^{x}$
Cd	0.81	$0.1-2.4^{x}$

a=maximum permissible level according to FAO (1976) and WHO (2003) x= normal range according to Brown 1979.

The soil of the study area had low levels of phosphate (Po<sub>4</sub>-) which was also reflected in its uptake by the roots and shoots of the test cropsorghum. The high levels of heavy metals obtained in automobile waste soil could be attributed to the disposal of bye-products from auto-repairs and servicing. Apart from soil enrichment with heavy metals, Atuanya (1987) and Nwoko et al., (2007) observed that contamination of the environment with such wastes has grave consequences on the system. Okpokwasili and Odukuma (1990) and Odu (1978) observed that such consequences include degradation of agricultural soils, surface and groundwater contamination, toxicity to biodata, poor soil aeration, impairment of water drainage and introduction of plant-growth inhibiting chemicals. According to Vousta et al., (1996) trace element uptake by roots depends on both soil and plant factor (e.g. source and chemical form of elements in soil, pH, organic matter plant species, plant age etc) interactions between elements occurring at the root surface and within the plant can affect uptake, as well as translocation and toxicity. High levels of heavy metal observed in the roots and shoots of sorghum in automobile waste soil could be attributed to soil enrichment of these metals by automobile wastes. Mbah et al., (2006) reported that the uptake of metals and subsequent accumulation in crops could cause serious health hazards when they are transferred to the food chain. Though soil heavy metal enrichment by automobile wastes exceeded maximum acceptable limit in the

soil, their uptake by shoots and roots of sorghum were with normal or acceptable limits, thus making automobile waste affected soil safe for agricultural activities or crop production in the study area.

#### Acknowledgement

The author is grateful to the laboratory staff of Project Development Institute (PRODA) Enugu and Laboratory staff of the Department of Soil Science, University of Nigeria, Nsukka.

#### References

- 1. Alloway, B. J. (1995). Heavy metals in soils 2<sup>nd</sup> edn. Chapman and Hall. Glasgow. Pp. 34.
- Javier, A. B. and Rafeal, M. C. (2005) Soil-water solute process characterization. An Integrated Approach C.R.C Press, Floida pp. 538.
- 3. Domingues-Rosado R. E. and Pitched, J. (2004). Phytoremediation of soil contaminated with used motor oil. In: Enhanced microbial activities from laboratory and growth chamber studies. *Environmental Engineering Science*, 2:157-168
- Nwoko C. O., Okeke, P. N., Agwu, O. O. and Akpan, I. E (2007). Performance of *phaseolus* villgaris in a soil contaminated with spent engine oil: African Journal of Biotechnology. 6(16): 1922-1925.
- Mbah C. N. and Ezeaku P. I (2010) Physicochemical characterization of farmland affected by automobile wastes in relation to heavy metals. *Nature and Science* 8 (10): 134-1138.
- Mbah C.N. and Anikwe M.A.N (2010) Variation of heavy metal contents of roadside soils along a major expressway on southeast Nigeria. *New York Science Journal* 3(10): 103-107

- 7. Turer D.G. and Maynard B. J. (2003) Heavy metal contamination in highway soils. *Clean Tech. Environ. Policy* 4:235-245.
- 8. Fagbenro J. A (2000) Analysis and Use of Organic Materials. Proc. 26<sup>th</sup> Annual Confers Soil Sci. Soc Nig. 2000: 165-171.
- Mbah C. N., Okonkwo C. I., Ogbodo E. N., Mbagwu J. S.C., Nwite J. N and Anikwe M.A.N. (2006). Trace elements in maize (Zea Mays I) as influenced by incorporation of animal wastes in dystric leptosoil in southeastern Nigeria. *Journal* of Science of Agricultural, food Tech. and The Environment. 6:33-39.
- FDALR (Federal Department of Agriculture and Land Resources) (1985). The reconnaissance soil survey of Anambra State soil report 1985. Federal Department of Agric and Land Res. Lagos-Nigeria
- 11. SAS Institute (2001). SAS user's Guide Statistics Version 8.2.
- 12. FAO (Food and Agricultural Organization) (1976). Soil Survey Investigations for Irrigation. Soil Bull Rome.
- 13. WHO (World Health Organization (2003). Guidelines for drinking water quality. (3<sup>rd</sup> edn) WHO Gener; Rome
- Brown H. M. (1979). Environmental Chemistry of Elements. Academic Press London.
- 15. Atuanya E. J. (1987) Effect of oil pollution on physical and chemical properties of soil. A case study of waste oil contaminated Delta Soil in Bendel State-Nigeria. *J. Appl. Sci.* 55:15-176.
- 16. Okpokwasili G. C. and Odokuna L. O. (1990) Effect of salinity on biodegradation of oil spill dispersants. *Waste Management*, 10: 141-146.
- 17. WHO (World Health Organization (2003). Guidelines for drinking water quality. (3<sup>rd</sup> edn) WHO Gener; Rome.

9/17/2010

## Academia Arena

(Academ Arena) ISSN 1553-992X

## 学术争鸣

## Call for Papers

Academia Arena is published bi-linguistically with English and Chinese for the scientists and Engineers by Marsland Press in USA. The journal founded in January 1, 2009 aims to present an arena of science and engineering. The Editor-in-Chief, Associate Editors-in-Chief and Editors have backgrounds in Philosophy, Science, Technology, Cosmology, Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry, Biology, Medicine, Civil, Electrical, Mechanical Engineering, etc. Papers submitted could be reviews, objective descriptions, research reports, opinions/debates, news, letters, and other types of writings. All manuscripts submitted will be peer-reviewed and the valuable manuscripts will be considered for the publication after the peer-review.

学术争鸣于2009年元月1日在美国纽约马斯兰德出版社发刊,主要目标为提供科学家与工程师及社会工作者学术辩论的发表园地,专业领域包含哲学、科学、技术、宇宙学、数学、物理、化学、生物学、医学、土木、电机、化工、机械工程,等,编辑群将以最专业客观的立场为所有投稿作者服务。

Here is a new avenue to publish your outstanding reports and ideas.

Papers in all fields are welcome, including articles in natural science and social science.

Please send your manuscript to: <a href="mailto:aarenaj@gmail.com">aarenaj@gmail.com</a>

For more information, please visit: <a href="http://www.sciencepub.net/academia">http://www.sciencepub.net/academia</a>

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Telephone: (347) 321-7172 E-mail: <u>sciencepub@gmail.com</u>;

editor@sciencepub.net

Emails: editor@sciencepub.net; aarenaj@gmail.com Website: http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia/

# Academia Arena

Marsland Press PO Box 180432 Richmond Hill, New York 11418, USA

Websites:

http://www.sciencepub.net/academia

http://www.sciencepub.net

Emails:

aarena@gmail.com editor@sciencepub.net

Phone: (347) 321-7172

Cover design: MA, Hongbao Photograph: YOUNG, Mary



Copyright © 2010 Marsland Press